

*Return to an Address of the Honourable the House of Commons  
dated 6 March 2014  
for*

**THE STEPHEN LAWRENCE INDEPENDENT REVIEW**  
**Possible corruption and the role of undercover policing  
in the Stephen Lawrence case**

Volume Two

Author: Mark Ellison QC

*Ordered by the House of Commons to be printed 6 March 2014*



© Crown copyright 2014

You may re-use this information (excluding logos) free of charge in any format or medium, under the terms of the Open Government Licence v.2. To view this licence visit [www.nationalarchives.gov.uk/doc/open-government-licence/version/2/](http://www.nationalarchives.gov.uk/doc/open-government-licence/version/2/) or email [PSI@nationalarchives.gsi.gov.uk](mailto:PSI@nationalarchives.gsi.gov.uk). Where third party material has been identified, permission from the respective copyright holder must be sought.

This publication is available at [www.gov.uk/government/publications](http://www.gov.uk/government/publications)

Any enquiries regarding this publication should be sent to us at:

Home Office  
2 Marsham Street  
London  
SW1P 4DF  
[public.enquiries@homeoffice.gsi.gov.uk](mailto:public.enquiries@homeoffice.gsi.gov.uk)

Print ISBN 9781474100502  
Web ISBN 9781474100519

Printed in the UK by the Williams Lea Group on behalf of the Controller of Her Majesty's Stationery Office  
ID 2628309 37119 03/14

Printed on paper containing 75% recycled fibre content minimum



## Appendices to the Report

Appendix 1:	Ministerial Statement and original terms of reference (July 2012)	3
Appendix 2:	Revised terms of reference (July 2013)	5
Appendix 3:	Brief history of the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry	7
Appendix 4:	Statements to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry of Mrs Doreen Lawrence, Mr Neville Lawrence and Mr Duwayne Brooks	15
Appendix 5:	Schedule of witnesses who appeared before Part One of the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry	97
Appendix 6:	Family liaison letter written by Commander Ray Adams on 30 April 1993	101
Appendix 7:	Correspondence between the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry and Deputy Commissioner Stevens, June and September 1998	103
Appendix 8:	Letter to the interested parties dated 25 June 1998	109
Appendix 9:	Media reports published in March 2012:	113
	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <i>The Independent</i>, 6 March 2012 – ‘The copper, the Lawrence killer’s father, and secret police files that expose a “corrupt relationship”’</li> </ul>	113
	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <i>The Guardian</i>, 16 March 2012 (Vikram Dodd) – ‘Report into Stephen Lawrence officer was not shown to inquiry’</li> </ul>	120
Appendix 10:	Metropolitan Police Service Review (published version), 31 May 2012	123
Appendix 11:	Additional material relating to Neil Putnam	133
Appendix 12:	Additional material relating to John Davidson	169
Appendix 13:	Article in <i>The Guardian</i> published on 23 June 2013	193
Appendix 14:	Articles in the <i>Daily Mail</i> published in 1997	197
Appendix 15:	Article in <i>The Observer</i> published on 14 March 2010	201
Appendix 16:	Attorney-General’s ‘undertaking’ given to Peter Francis	205
Appendix 17:	<i>Operation Herne: Report 1 – Use of covert identities</i> , dated 16 July 2013	207
Appendix 18:	Documents relating to the covert recording of Duwayne Brooks and his solicitor	231
Appendix 19:	Documents supplied by Greater Manchester Police	235
Appendix 20:	Documents supplied by West Yorkshire Police	237



## Appendix I: Ministerial Statement and original terms of reference (July 2012)

E.R

Wednesday 11<sup>th</sup> July 2012

### HOME OFFICE

#### Stephen Lawrence: QC-Led Review

**The Secretary of State for the Home Department (Theresa May):** In response to an Urgent Question by the hon Member for Eltham (Clive Efford) on 24 April, my hon Friend the Parliamentary Under-Secretary of State for the Home Department (James Brokenshire) made a statement on my behalf about the continuing allegations that have appeared in the media over recent months of police corruption in the original investigation into the murder of Stephen Lawrence. As my Hon Friend said at that time, allegations of police corruption must always be taken seriously. It is essential we ensure that the actions and behaviour of corrupt police officers do not undermine public confidence in the police's ability to respond to, investigate and fight crime. I undertook to keep the House updated.

On 31 May, the Home Office announced that I had decided to call for an independent, QC review of the work the Metropolitan Police Service has undertaken into allegations of corruption in the original investigation into the murder of Stephen Lawrence.

I have asked Mark Ellison QC to carry out this review and he has agreed. Mr Ellison was the lead prosecutor in the successful prosecutions of Gary Dobson and David Norris for the murder of Stephen Lawrence. He will be supported by Alison Morgan, the junior counsel from the prosecution of Gary Dobson and David Norris.

The review team has agreed Terms of Reference with the Lawrence family and I will arrange for a copy to be placed in the Library of the House. The Review will begin in July 2012 and will aim to complete its findings by July 2013. The team will report to me and I intend to publish the Review's report.

The review will address the following questions: -

- Is there evidence providing reasonable grounds for suspecting that any officer associated with the initial investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence acted corruptly?
- Are there any further lines of investigation connected to the issue of possible corrupt activity by any officer associated with the initial investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence?
- Was the McPherson Inquiry provided with all relevant material connected to the issue of possible corrupt activity by any officer associated with the initial investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence? If not, what impact might that have had on the Inquiry?

The review team is calling for evidence to be submitted to the review for consideration alongside the significant amount of material made available by the Metropolitan Police Service. Evidence should be sent to [SLMEQC@qebhw.co.uk](mailto:SLMEQC@qebhw.co.uk) or by post to Stephen Lawrence Review, PO Box 70744, London, EC4P 4DT.

I am grateful to the Commissioner for the support he has offered to the review. I know that the Metropolitan Police Service will cooperate fully with the review team.

## **Review by Mark Ellison QC of allegations that the investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence was affected by police corruption**

### ***Terms of reference***

The purpose of this review is to carry out an independent examination of the questions addressed in a recent review by the Metropolitan Police Service (MPS) following the allegations of corruption that have appeared in the media concerning officers connected to the initial police investigation. The work carried out by the MPS was published on 31 May 2012.<sup>1</sup>

The review will address the following questions:

1. Is there evidence providing reasonable grounds for suspecting that any officer associated with the initial investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence acted corruptly?
2. Are there any further lines of inquiry meriting investigation connected to the issue of possible corrupt activity by any officer associated with the initial investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence?
3. Was the McPherson Inquiry provided with all relevant material connected to the issue of possible corrupt activity by any officer associated with the initial investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence?

The review will be carried out by Mark Ellison QC. [He will be supported by NAME and NAME.] The review will begin on [DATE] and should aim to complete its findings by [JUNE 2013].

In carrying out this review, Mark Ellison QC and his team will:

- Have access to all files held by the MPS relating to the investigations into the murder of Stephen Lawrence;
- Have access to any files the review team considers necessary to carry out their review;
- Be able to speak to any serving police officers they wish;
- Provide bi-monthly updates as to progress to Mr Lawrence and his solicitor;
- Take account of any representations made by or on behalf of Mr Lawrence;
- Provide bi-monthly updates as to progress to Mrs Lawrence and her solicitor;
- Take account of any representations made by or on behalf of Mrs Lawrence;
- Provide bi-monthly updates to the Home Secretary;
- Submit a report to the Home Secretary which makes recommendations for further action, including whether any evidence should be passed to the DPP

---

<sup>1</sup> <http://content.met.police.uk/News/MPS-publishes-report-in-to-corruption-allegations-and-the-Stephen-Lawrence-Inquiry/1400008923135/1257246745756>

## **Appendix 2: Revised terms of reference (July 2013)**

### **Review by Mark Ellison QC of allegations that the investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence was affected by police corruption**

#### ***Terms of reference – revised July 2013***

The purpose of this Review is to carry out an independent examination of the questions addressed in a recent review by the Metropolitan Police Service (MPS) following the allegations of corruption that have appeared in the media concerning officers connected to the initial police investigation (the work carried out by the MPS was published on 31 May 2012); and to establish the extent of involvement of undercover police operations in the case and whether details of these were withheld from the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry.

The Review will now need to address the following questions:

1. Is there evidence providing reasonable grounds for suspecting that any officer associated with the initial investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence acted corruptly?
2. Are there any further lines of investigation connected to the issue of possible corrupt activity by any officer associated with the initial investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence?
3. Was the Macpherson Inquiry provided with all relevant material connected to the issue of possible corrupt activity by any officer associated with the initial investigation of the murder of Stephen Lawrence? If not, what impact might that have had on the Inquiry?
4. What was the role of undercover policing in the Lawrence case, who ordered it and why? Was information on the involvement of undercover police withheld from the Macpherson Inquiry, and if it had been made available what impact might that have had on the Inquiry?
5. What was the extent of intelligence or surveillance activity ordered or carried out by police forces nationally in respect of the Macpherson Inquiry, Stephen Lawrence's family or any others connected with the Inquiry or the family?
6. What was the extent, purpose and authorisation for any surveillance of Duwayne Brooks and his solicitor?

The Review will be carried out by Mark Ellison QC and he will be supported by Alison Morgan. The Review began in July 2012 and will aim to provide a report on key findings by December 2013.

In carrying out this work, the Review team will:

- Have access to all files held by the MPS relating to the investigations into the murder of Stephen Lawrence;
- Have access to any files the Review team considers necessary to carry out their review, eg those held by other police forces, the IPCC and the Home Office;
- Be able to speak to anyone, including serving police officers, they wish;

- Work closely with those responsible for Operation Herne investigating the operations and activities of undercover officers in the Special Demonstration Squad;
- Provide bi-monthly updates as to progress to Mr Lawrence and his solicitor;
- Take account of any representations made by or on behalf of Mr Lawrence;
- Provide bi-monthly updates as to progress to Mrs Lawrence and her solicitor;
- Take account of any representations made by or on behalf of Mrs Lawrence;
- Provide bi-monthly updates to the Home Secretary.

## Reporting

The Review team will submit a report to the Home Secretary by 31 December 2013 setting out its conclusions, including whether the Review:

- i) has identified information that should lead to further action arising from the review, including whether any evidence should be passed to the DPP;
- ii) has been able to uncover all material evidence relating to the issues covered by the Terms of Reference and, if not, whether a public inquiry would have a greater chance of doing so.

## Appendix 3: Brief history of the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry

### Brief history of the Inquiry

#### Background

On 24 June 1997, the Home Secretary (the Rt Hon Jack Straw MP) met with Mr & Mrs Lawrence to discuss their application, made via their solicitor Mr Imran Khan, for a judicial inquiry into the death of their son, Stephen. They were accompanied by Mr Khan and Michael Mansfield QC, Bernie Grant MP, John Austin-Walker MP and supporters of the Lawrence family. Mr Straw and his Ministers had been considering for some weeks their concern about this matter.

2. After that meeting, a news release in these terms was issued by Mr Straw:

*"I am glad to have been able to meet Mr & Mrs Lawrence today and have been deeply moved listening to the tragic circumstances surrounding the death of their son, Stephen.*

*Whilst in opposition I met Mrs Lawrence and was impressed by her determination and courage in such difficult circumstances. This meeting was my first opportunity to meet Mr & Mrs Lawrence in my capacity as Home Secretary and another chance for me to discuss with them the distressing details of their son's case. We have also had the chance to discuss broader issues, including racially motivated crime and the relationship between the police and ethnic minority communities.*

*It is not an option to let this matter rest.*

*I recognise that a strong case has been made by Mrs Lawrence for some form of an inquiry and I am actively considering what she put to me.*

*I will also carefully consider the other issues that were raised during our meeting and reflect on the best way to address the widespread concern resulting from this case.*

*I hope to make an announcement soon."*

#### Appointment

3. On 31 July 1997, the Home Secretary gave written answers to Parliamentary Questions from Clive Efford MP and John Austin-Walker MP, saying that he had decided to establish an inquiry under section 49 of the Police Act 1996. The terms of reference of the inquiry were to be:

*"To inquire into the matters arising from the death of Stephen Lawrence on 22 April 1993 to date, in order particularly to identify the lessons to be learned for the investigation and prosecution of racially motivated crimes."*



4. Sir William Macpherson of Cluny, formerly a High Court Judge, was appointed to conduct the inquiry, being supported as Advisers by Mr Tom Cook, formerly Deputy Chief Constable, West Yorkshire Police; Dr Richard Stone, Chairman, Jewish Council for Racial Equality; and the Rt Revd Dr John Sentamu, the Bishop for Stepney.

### **First steps**

5. Stephen Wells and Alison Foulds from the Home Office's Operational Policing Policy Unit were appointed Secretary and Assistant Secretary in August 1997; and Peter Whitehurst, from the Treasury Solicitor's Department, was appointed Solicitor to the Inquiry in the same month. Linda Dann joined as the Assistant Solicitor in November; with Janet Crowl and Gerry Ranson, as the Personal Secretary and Documents Officer respectively in the Secretariat, arriving in December. Jayne Wiltshire, Personal Secretary, joined the Treasury Solicitors team also in December. Mike Booker acted as Inquiry Press Officer from February to December 1998. Maureen Puttnam joined as a Personal Secretary in December 1998.

6. The Attorney General instructed David Penry-Davey QC as Counsel to the Inquiry, with Anesta Weekes as second counsel. Unfortunately, the Inquiry very quickly was denied the services of Mr Penry-Davey upon his appointment to the High Court Bench: Edmund Lawson QC was appointed as successor in November 1997. John Gibson joined as junior Counsel in December.

7. Separate, short and informal meetings with Mr & Mrs Lawrence, and their Counsel and Solicitor; and with the Chairman and Deputy Chairman of the Police Complaints Authority; the Commissioner and Deputy Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police; the Director of Public Prosecutions; and officials from the Commission for Racial Equality, were held very soon after the Inquiry was formed. These were the obvious initial main parties to the Inquiry; and the purpose behind the meetings was for them and the Inquiry to discuss any immediate problems and concerns.

### **Background reading**

8. Ahead of, during, and after the formal proceedings of the Inquiry, a number of sources of background information - reports and other publications, videos, press articles - were seen and read by the Chairman, Advisers and support staff. A bibliography is given in Appendix 18.

### **Accommodation and services**

9. In accordance with convention, the Inquiry quickly sought to establish itself locally, in premises within the London Borough of Greenwich. Unfortunately, given the nature of the Inquiry and its need for sufficient space, privacy and security, appropriate premises could not be found in the Borough, although a number of alternatives were examined. Premises were ultimately found in Hannibal House in the Elephant & Castle area of Southwark, South East London, and these were converted to the Inquiry's requirements. The search for accommodation was an arduous one, and the Inquiry expresses its thanks, in particular, to the London Borough of Greenwich; ISD7 Branch of the Department of Health; and the Buildings and Estate Management Unit in the Home Office for their help, the latter also for their management of the necessary building works. The Inquiry moved to Hannibal House on 1 December 1997.



10. It soon became clear that the volume of papers likely to come before the Inquiry would be vast, and could only properly be managed, both in terms of their use as a resource and an archive as well as their handling during hearings, by use of sophisticated information technology. Other Inquiries were visited - including the North Wales Child Abuse and the Ashworth Special Hospital tribunals - to discern an appropriate solution. With the help of the Home Office Central Information Systems Unit, a specification was devised. Contractors were invited to submit competitive tenders for meeting this requirement, Sellers Imago being successful. The Inquiry therefore was able to operate without recourse to masses of paper copies of documentary evidence: instead, as is increasingly customary in public inquiries, material was scanned into the system (by Legal Technologies Limited), and then called up (by Grace Vaughan, from Sellers Imago) and viewed, on screens, in the Inquiry chamber. As evidence was given, a contemporaneous note of the proceedings was prepared and shown on screen. This service was also provided by Sellers Imago, a contract being awarded after competitive tendering.

11. Copies of the transcript were available for consultation in Hannibal House. A copy was also sent each day to the public library closest to Hannibal House, and to the central library of the London Borough of Greenwich.

### **The site of the murder**

12. The Chairman, Mr Cook, Secretary and Assistant Secretary, and Solicitor visited the site of Stephen Lawrence's murder, on 7 October 1997. Counsel, junior Counsel and Secretary returned to the site the next day. A night-hours visit by the junior Counsel, and Secretary and Assistant Secretary was made to the site and surrounding locality on 3 November. Mr Cook and the Assistant Secretary visited the site again during November. The Secretary and Dr Sentamu made a night hours visit on 1 December.

13. Other visits to the site by Inquiry staff took place. The Secretary attended vigils held at the place where Stephen died, led by Dr Sentamu on 15 March and 22 April 1998.

### **Immunity**

14. The Attorney General authorised the Chairman to give the following undertaking in respect of immunity:

*"In respect of any person who provides evidence to this Inquiry, that no evidence he or she may give before the Inquiry, whether orally or by written statement, nor any written statement made preparatory to giving evidence nor any documents produced by that person to the Inquiry, will be used in evidence against him or her in any criminal proceedings, except in proceedings where he or she is charged with having given false evidence in the course of this Inquiry or having conspired with or procured others so to do."*

15. A similar immunity in respect of disciplinary matters was provided by the Police Complaints Authority and the Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police.

## **Preliminary hearing**

16. The Chairman held a preliminary public hearing at Woolwich Public Hall, Market Street, Woolwich on 8 October 1997. At this meeting, the Chairman dealt with some procedural aspects of the Inquiry, and invited applications from parties to be legally represented. Extracts from the transcript of the hearing are at Appendix 3.

17. This hearing was advertised by Public Notice in newspapers circulating in the locality, in the London Borough of Greenwich's own newspaper, and in four newspapers printed by the ethnic minority press. The principal parties to the case and the Greenwich Council for Racial Equality were given separate notice of the hearing. The print media were allowed to be present throughout, but the broadcast media were not permitted to film the proceedings.

18. Further preliminary hearings were held at Hannibal House, with limited attendance. These were, for instance, to explore formally matters of public interest immunity relating to documents in the hands of the Metropolitan Police.

## **Report from the Police Complaints Authority into Mr & Mrs Lawrence's complaints against the Metropolitan Police Service**

19. A report under section 97(2) of the Police and Criminal Evidence Act 1984 was presented to the Home Secretary by the Police Complaints Authority, and this was placed before Parliament on 15 December 1997. It is reproduced at Appendix 2. After some necessary deletions, the report by the Investigating Officer, and the supporting evidence, was in due course made available, without precedent, to the parties to the Inquiry.

## **Collection of evidence**

20. The represented parties to the Inquiry were required by section 250 of the Local Government Act 1972 to provide documents to the Inquiry. The first major batch of documents was received by the Inquiry on 9 October 1997, from the Metropolitan Police Service. All evidence was placed in secure storage in Hannibal House, while agreement to share individual batches of documents with the other represented parties was obtained. In some cases, particularly so as to protect the identities of witnesses and informants, or so as not to hinder the continuing police investigation into the case, steps were taken to "redact", that is to say, censor, relevant content in documents.

21. During February 1998, the Inquiry produced a schedule of issues emerging from the evidence, and this was shared and agreed with the represented parties to the Inquiry. Documents were entered onto several CD ROMs, so that the evidence could be viewed by the parties, with viewing software, away from Hannibal House. In all, about 100,000 pages of evidence were received by the Inquiry.

22. At this time, advertisements were placed in local newspapers, calling for witnesses to Stephen's murder, or those who had other evidence, to come forward to the Inquiry.

## **The Media**

23. Representatives of the media were invited to meet the Chairman, and view the Inquiry's facilities, in February 1998. They were also invited to photograph the Chairman visiting the site of Stephen's murder, shortly before the public hearings began.

## Part 1 Hearings

24. A number of adjournments were agreed by the Chairman, so that the first formal public hearing of the Inquiry did not take place until 16 March 1998. On that day, the Chairman agreed to a further application for an adjournment on behalf of Mr & Mrs Lawrence, so that they might consult the Home Secretary about the contents of a critical article which had appeared in the Observer newspaper the day before. Having being reassured by the Home Secretary, Mr & Mrs Lawrence were present when the Inquiry reopened on 24 March. The relevant extracts from the transcripts of the hearings are at Appendices 4 and 5.

25. A full list of the witnesses who gave evidence at the Inquiry is given at Appendix 14. All witnesses were given advance notice of the issues proposed to be raised with them: these notices are known colloquially as “Salmon” letters.

26. Hearings were conducted formally. The Inquiry had powers to call for witnesses to attend, under section 250 of the Local Government Act 1972. Witnesses were sworn, and Counsel for the Inquiry examined each witness, relevant cross examination from each party following. Witnesses were also required to answer questions from the Chairman and his Advisers.

27. Notices announcing the opening of the Inquiry were placed in local, minority and national newspapers. The public and the media were given free and open access to the Inquiry. There was no recording or broadcasting of the Inquiry. Proceedings were relayed by closed circuit television to an assembly and waiting area in Hannibal House, so that those unable to gain a seat in the Chamber could nevertheless witness proceedings; and so that those who found themselves distressed by the proceedings could nevertheless also share in the work of the Inquiry. Closed circuit television monitors were also provided in a press room; and basic fax, telephone and photocopying facilities were provided for the public and for the media.

28. Civilian security staff acted as receptionists and as general supervisors of the Inquiry floor, but the day to day supervision of the Inquiry Chamber was undertaken by the Secretary and Assistant Secretary. Information packs for the media and for the general public were provided. Private rooms were provided for the parties to the Inquiry.

29. Enhanced safety measures were put in place on 29 and 30 June, and on 1 October. On those days proceedings were also broadcast by video link to overflow accommodation in the Elephant & Castle shopping centre.

30. Closing submissions to Part 1 of the Inquiry were made in September 1998, followed almost immediately by oral submissions to Part 2 of the Inquiry.

## Hearings “in chambers”

31. From time to time, the Chairman of the Inquiry was required to rule on applications which needed to be made, in the interests of avoiding prejudice or maintaining the safety of individuals, in private. On such occasions, the public and media were invited back into the Inquiry Chamber to hear the Chairman’s rulings.



## **The 5 “Suspects”**

32. Once the decision had been taken to call as witnesses the five men previously charged with Stephen’s murder, a hearing in chambers took place on 14 May 1998. This was to discuss the range of questions to be put, and the procedure to be adopted for their examination and cross-examination. In the light of that, a notice of leave to apply for judicial review of the Inquiry’s decision to call the men was made.

33. The application was heard before Mr Justice Laws on 12 June. He held that the draft questions proposed to be put to the men could raise matters outside of the proper terms of remit of the Inquiry, and the application was granted. The substantive hearing was held before Lord Justice Simon Brown and Mr Justice Hooper on 18 June. It was held that the five men could not properly be asked questions as to their guilt or innocence; but reaffirmed the Chairman’s discretion, other than that, to allow questions to be put to them.

34. The five men gave evidence on 29 and 30 June. Proceedings were disrupted on 29 June, but evidence was resumed once order had been restored.

35. A video showing extracts from recordings made by a video/audio surveillance probe of Gary Dobson’s premises had been shown on 15 June. The transcript of that video is at Appendix 10.

## **Part 2 Hearings**

36. In May 1998, the Secretary wrote to a range of organisation and individuals, inviting written submissions about their concerns in respect of racially motivated crime, and ideas for the future handling of such cases. Advertisements were also placed in a range of newspapers. A total of 148 submissions was received, as listed in Appendix 17.

37. So that its terms of reference might be met in full, the Inquiry undertook to take oral evidence in Hannibal House from those organisations best placed to implement any recommendations which the Inquiry might ultimately put forward. These hearings took place in late September and early October 1998, and a full list of those making such submissions is given in Appendix 16.

38. In order to test the temperature of opinion outside South East London, meetings in public were also held at six locations away from the Elephant & Castle. These were held in Ealing and Tower Hamlets in West and East London respectively; and in Manchester, Bradford, Bristol and Birmingham. The dates of these meetings are also given in Appendix 16, together with a full list of those appearing before the Inquiry on those days.

39. During this period the Press Officer issued newsletters to interested parties so that they could keep abreast of the work of the Inquiry.

## **Provisional criticism by the Inquiry**

40. In accordance with principles of completeness, those individuals who were likely to face criticism by the Inquiry were, in December 1998, given advanced notice of the substance of those criticisms. This process, known colloquially as “Maxwellisation”, invited witnesses to respond to the criticisms proposed to be made, and to provide any further representations about the proposed criticism. Those responses were considered by the Inquiry during January 1999, and have been reflected in the Inquiry’s Report.

### **Cost of the Inquiry**

41. The final cost of the Inquiry was not certain at the time of printing this Report, but is likely to be in excess of £3m.

42. The Chairman recommended to the Home Secretary that the Metropolitan Police Service should, in accordance with section 49(5) of the Police Act 1996, meet the full costs of setting up and establishing the Inquiry, together with all those costs which directly accrued from Part 1 of the Inquiry. The costs of Part 2 of the Inquiry, establishing the future handling of cases of racially motivated crime, should, the Chairman believes, be met by the Home Office as the findings were of more general application.



## **Appendix 4: Statements to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry of Mrs Doreen Lawrence, Mr Neville Lawrence and Mr Duwayne Brooks**

### **STATEMENT OF DOREEN LAWRENCE - 8th March 1998**

[As provided to the Inquiry; read to the Inquiry on 25th March 1998].

My name is Doreen Lawrence. I was born on 24th October 1952 in Clarendon, Jamaica. I have two brothers and a sister. I am the eldest of the four of us. We were all born in the UK.

I lived with my mother in Jamaica and in 1954 she came to England leaving me with my grandmother until her death. I came to the United Kingdom in 1962 at the age of 9 years old on my own because my mother had sent for me. I lived then with my mother and stepfather in Brockley, South-East London. My mother had remarried before I arrived in England. My father had also remarried and now lived in North London. When I arrived in London I found it very frightening. The houses were close together and smoke would come out of the chimneys and all was generally dark and gloomy. I attended the John Stainer Primary School and then the Christopher Marlowe Secondary School in New Cross.

I obtained CSEs and when I left school I got a job as a bank clerk for NatWest Bank. I worked there for 4 years and left when I had Stephen. At that time I only had CSE qualifications but in the last five years I have gained a BA in Humanities and I am now doing an MSC in therapeutic counselling.

I met my husband Neville in early 1970, I was living in Greenwich with my other at the time. Neville and myself got married in 1972 in Lewisham Registry Office and went to live in Brockley. Later we moved to a flat in Plumstead and that is where Stephen was born on 13th September 1974.

I personally have never had any racism directed at me. There was always something I felt on the outskirts but nobody ever directly approached me and was racist towards me. I went to a racially mixed all girls school and I do not remember any. I don't have any close white friends from my school days, but I do have five black school friends who I am still very close to.

I didn't go into further education because in those days where black children were concerned you weren't really encouraged at school. I remember clearly when it was time to leave school - I can't remember exactly what I said I wanted, but I think I told them I wanted to go into banking or something like that and the teacher said, no, you must go and do that and the teacher said, like working in a factory. Being the eldest of four from a West Indian background I was given much more responsibilities than other children. I looked after my younger brothers and sisters and that prevented me from studying in a way I wanted to. I did know, however, that doing something with my hands was clearly not something that I wanted to do.

I went on then and looked for my own job, I just applied for things through the papers. I had quite a few interviews, all in banking, and I went to NatWest Bank. About three of us from school went and worked at the same bank. I did the normal entrance tests and I passed that and worked there for four years.

I remained in contact with my brothers and sisters throughout this period, we were all relatively close. We did have problems as youngsters, of course, as teenagers growing up, rows with your mother and that sort of thing, that went on for a while. At times there was the odd major thing and we lost touch but we all got back together again afterwards.

When Stephen was born there were no major problems with him as a child. He was a good child and he was very happy. His early years were not problematic. He always knew, though, when things

weren't right with him. You always felt that. Right up to primary school I can. You always felt that. Right up to primary school I can recall that Stephen was very bright. He knew what he wanted from a young age. He learned very quickly before he started school. He could write his name and he always picked up things quickly. He knew his alphabet as well. He could count and he recognised a few words. He was the type of child that whatever you taught him he always wanted to go one further but colouring and drawing was his special thing.

Stephen went to Cyril Henry Nursery in Woolwich on part-time basis and then later on to Eglington Primary School. I didn't work until Stephen was 18 months old. I didn't have a full-time job even then. Neville at that stage was learning his trade as a plasterer but by the time Stephen was born he was into retail, selling leather and things and after that he moved into the building trade.

At Stephen's primary school he was very happy, he got on well and he was well liked by the teachers. Every day each child would have a set of things they would do when they first came in. She would write letters and he had to go over them with a paintbrush and I think that helped him to develop his handwriting. He left primary school to go to Blackheath Bluecoat. We wanted him to go to Thomas Moore Catholic School but because we weren't practising Catholics we couldn't get him into there. I felt that this was a good school on academic achievements but because he wasn't accepted on religious grounds we had to start looking at other schools. I was impressed with Blackheath Bluecoat because I saw how the children were actually working. When you turned up at the school it looked very hard working and I was impressed, so we decided to send him there.

Stephen coped well at school. He had no problems academically at all. He did his GCEs but Stephen didn't really work as well as he could. I think because he was very bright it went a bit to his head and had he studied harder I think he would have got a much higher grade. However, having said that he did pass all of his GCEs. I certainly don't remember Stephen ever complaining about Blackheath Bluecoat. I know that sometimes he had felt that the Head Teacher was unjust in some of his ways. For example, quite a lot of black children were excluded from the school, but he personally never really encountered anything. His only brush with racism was back in primary school when he was quite young. There was a boy who lived up the road from us. They used to be friends. So I can't remember what started this off, but I do remember being called into school because apparently he had been getting into fights with this boy and, when I asked him about it, he told me that the boy had called him racist names. I'm not sure what the exact names were, but he would hear it and so would his friends. I think at the time he was one of the few black children in the class, so the majority of his friends were white, and they would tell him what this boy had been saying about him. So he had the support of his white friends against this boy and they used to get into fights. When I went into the school, I told the Head that if the child was being racist to him, then Stephen was justified in sticking up for himself. That was the end of it and it didn't go any further because I think the Head recognised that Stephen was not the kind of child to be in fights and that it was only because of this incident. I would say that Stephen was aware of the racism however.

Stephen was also into sport. During Sports Days he always came top. He got a certificate, which is a Five Star, the highest award Blackheath Bluecoat awarded to anybody, he had a couple of those. He also ran for Cambridge Harriers. Initially he used to go to Sutcliffe Park, which is another athletics club, but there he was always experiencing some difficulty with the trainers. It was as if they had a sort of favouritism within that club and they saw him as being very young and, even though Stephen wanted to get on, I felt they were holding him back a bit.

Stephen's main interests were sport and education. He saw himself going into architecture as a profession, however. When he was about 7, or even before, he would set himself goals. I remember before his 6th birthday he said he wanted a watch for his sixth birthday and I said: "Only if you can tell the time", and he said: "When I am six, I will be able to tell the time", and of course he got his



watch because he could tell the time by then. When it came to drawing and things, he was always doing that, he would do birthday cards, Christmas cards, and he would always make his own cards as a child and Mother's Day cards for me, and he was always into the Arts.

Racism isn't something that we dwelled on, I think and, looking back at things, Stephen actually protected me from a lot of things that were happening to him. He never told me everything. Occasionally he would mention the same boy that he had the original incident with, even though, when they left primary school and were on secondary school, this boy used to go to Eaglesfield, which is at the top of the road from where we lived. They were at different schools, but when they were coming home, because of the bus stop that the child would take home, they would meet each other, and I think that the child thought that maybe, as Stephen didn't have anybody around him on the way home, he could start on him; but no matter where he was, Stephen would never tolerate anything like that from him.

In secondary school Stephen didn't go around in a group. He had a close circle of friends. I remember by the time he was a sixth former though, you would only see him with one person, who was Elvin. Elvin was his best friend. Elvin was an arty person and, because he did a lot of work in art and they both had a flair for it, they would spend a lot of their time together. Elvin wasn't interested in sports however, so they never went training together but Elvin would come to our house. They went to Woolwich College together and spent time together, as they had done at school: they had been to the same secondary school.

Stephen also started Cubs at the age of eight. The church that we belonged to had their own little group and, because we were members of the church Stephen got involved in that. So he started off as a Cub and moved up to be a Scout. He was in the Scouts until he was in secondary school at about 13 or 14. In terms of activity, they had the Sports Day and, of course, Stephen loved to run. We have lots of his certificates at home. He had won all sorts of things. They would also put on shows and Christmas plays. It was a big thing for him being in the Scouts. I remember in one particular play in which he played Rupert the Bear, and dressed up in a costume with a white face and stripy trousers, he really enjoyed that. It was something that he enjoyed initially but, obviously, began to outgrow. They used to meet once a week, all the Scouts, and play games together and things; and because it was something to do with the church, they would have a parade one Sunday in the month as well. Stephen used to ask if he could carry the flag, which he really enjoyed. There was the Union Jack, St George's and other Guides and Scouts and Brownies and the different organisations would meet together on this day, so you had all the different flags.

Stephen had his black identity, and I would say he called himself a Jamaican. He went to Jamaica when he was four. He spent his first birthday out there, but he would never remember that. When he was four we went again and he was old enough to remember. He enjoyed his time out there, and it was something that he always said that he would like to do again.

He met Duwayne at secondary school because when he started they were in the same class. His relationship with Stephen only developed, I think, because Duwayne knew my brother and Duwayne's mother and my brother were friends; and I think that that is the way that Duwayne fits in. I felt that Duwayne - I'm not sure if it was about his own insecurity, but it often came across to me that Duwayne needed Stephen more than Stephen needed him. Stephen was an outgoing person: he would make friends easily and he had a lot of friends; he was extremely popular.

Stephen did work experience from school with an architect's firm for two weeks. He did this in November when he was doing his final year of GCEs. I am not sure what year it was, but I think it was 1991 and then the final year of GCEs. This placement we sought ourselves for him because what

the school do is that they send a letter home telling you that the time is coming up, and that the school can provide something, but if you know anybody, you can accept that place.

Neville worked with someone who was a surveyor, or an engineer, and he introduced us to Arthur Timothy. Neville took Stephen along to meet him, this Arthur Timothy, and I think that, once he and Stephen met, they liked each other. They got on well and he was offered a place. It was at Tower Bridge, and Stephen went there for two weeks. It wasn't a big office. It was quite a small place, so Stephen was left on his own for quite a while, especially when Mr Timothy had to go out to meet clients, Stephen was left in charge to answer the phones and take messages and all sorts of things. I presume that in that space of time it was shown that he could have the responsibility of doing that sort of thing and he was given the chance. When Stephen came home he would talk about it a lot and show us the work that he had produced. I was very impressed with it, I remember, because I used to talk to my colleagues about it and I thought it looked very professional. One of the designs he did was used on a building in Deptford. It is easily recognisable from his drawings, the shape of the windows and everything Stephen did. This building is on Deptford Broadway. The architect who did the design for this, that Stephen was working for, copied Stephen's drawing; and you can see that. Stephen was very proud of this.

In 1993 Stephen was doing his A-levels in English Language and Literature at Woolwich College. That took up two days of his week; and he was at Blackheath Bluecoat doing A-level Designer Technology and re-sitting his GCE Physics, so he was studying, effectively, full-time. Stephen also worked at the Fun Junction which is a play centre where you take kids for an hour or so. He did that for a while on a part-time basis just at the weekends. The money he earned helped to support him for school, or whatever outside activities he wanted to do. When that closed down he went to work at the McDonald's in Old Kent Road; and he was doing that right up until he died, really.

Stephen always wanted to be an architect, as I have said. He had set this for his goal, and, hence, the A-level subjects that he chose reflected what he felt were necessary to do architecture. He was to go to college and then to university, but we hadn't got to the start of looking at what university he was going to.

Stephen was a healthy boy: he never had anything wrong with him. He had a slight touch of asthma when he was running, but nothing really major.

Stuart, Stephen's brother and Stephen got on well. Well, usually well until they fell out from time to time, as children do, especially when Georgina was little: having a baby sister was really something. When you look at the pictures of them when they were small, Stephen used to push Stuart out; Georgina was his baby sister. Stuart and Stephen got on because they shared a room. Parents really don't know half of what goes on between youngsters when they fall out. I am not sure exactly why they would fall out, but it wouldn't be for a long time. They had one fairly really long period, but that had started building up again just before Stephen had died.

As to music, Stephen mainly liked women singers, but he was also into Pop and Reggae and Hip-Hop.

From the time that I left school and I went to the NatWest Bank and worked there and had Stephen, I was doing temporary, part-time jobs. So I was working temporarily, or not for very long periods, while Stephen was growing up. I worked at Goldsmith's Bookshop; I was a care assistant; I did office cleaning and, up until 1981, those were the sort of jobs I did. I then started working in schools, because they fitted in well with the children's holidays. I was a Guide, where you take children from one school to another if they have special needs; and I did that up until 1982 when I had Georgina and stopped when she was about three. That would take me to 1985, because she was born in 1982.



I was then working at the school where Stuart and Stephen attended, Eglington Primary School as a lunchtime supervisor. I did that for about six months, and by 1986, I started working full-time as a “special needs helper” with the school, and stayed there for a couple of years. After that I went back into education.

I did an Access course because I didn’t have any A-levels to go to university. I went back to university because, when I was working at the schools, I was doing a lot of work with the teachers. They encouraged me, told me that I was wasted there and that I had the ability to do a lot more, and asked me why I didn’t. One of the teachers got the prospectus for me and told me what courses to attend. At this point we were living at Llanover Road, and that’s where we were living when Stephen was killed.

The area we were living in was quite tense, but I think, because of the person I am, I didn’t really take any notice. As long as it wasn’t interfering with me or my children, there was nothing major happening.

I know that Stephen had incidents with other children around the area when playing. I can remember one time that a boy spat in his face, and how angry I was, and I challenged the mother over it. He was about nine and he used to ride his bike around the back of our house; and it was in this play area that the incident happened.

When we moved to Llanover Road we started going to the Methodist Church where Stephen was baptised and most of his childhood was spent. Stephen went to church regularly. He was part of the junior church and, in those days, there was a lot of activities for youngsters within the church which he took part in. He took his religion quite seriously. At one point he said that he wanted to be confirmed, but it is quite a big step and, at the time, I felt that he was too young and that he should wait a bit because it wasn’t something that you should go into lightly. I wanted him to think about it.

As teenagers do, however, they grow out of the church because the church doesn’t really have that much to offer them; and a lot of people who used to be youth leaders had left Trinity Church, so they lost that leadership that the church used to have. We used to go to church in Burrage Road on a weekly basis. Stuart and Georgina went as well. Children tend to go and continue up to about their early teens, but then by the time they are 14 or 15, that is when they start to trail off.

By 1993 I was at college doing my first degree in Humanities. In April 1993 I went on a field trip. I was a first year then, and that is something that you do on our course in the university. We had gone to Birmingham for two days. I left on the Tuesday morning and we travelled down and came back for the Thursday night. The last time I saw Stephen alive was on the Tuesday morning. I was leaving early because I had to be at Woolwich by 8.30am and he came down for breakfast. You just don’t think about it at the time. If you knew that it was the last time you were going to see somebody, the things that you would say to them and all that. I told him I was going to be away for a couple of days, that I would ring him that night to tell him if there was a telephone number of anyway that he could get in contact with me and that was it. I just said that I would see him when I got back. I did the things that you usually do when you go out. You say where you are going, how long you are going to be away for and I will ring you. When I rang on the Tuesday night Stephen wasn’t home yet, so I didn’t speak to him. I arrived back in London on the Thursday night at about 9 o’clock. Neville picked me up and we went back to the house. Stuart was awake and Neville said that Stephen wasn’t home yet and Georgina was asleep. It wasn’t unusual that Stephen wasn’t home. He had to be home between 10.00 and 10.30. I said that because I felt that, being at school and studying, it is quite a reasonable time; but then again, Stephen was 18, so even though we said that, if he didn’t get home by then, there is not a lot you can do because of his age.

We had set that time a long time ago and it hadn't really changed over the years. We had been quite strict on being home on time in the beginning, but after the influence of Duwayne, it was different. Duwayne was allowed to come and go as he pleased, and it didn't really matter what time he got home.

I remember, Stephen was 14 when we first had this argument. It was 10.30 and then it was 10.00, because at times he wasn't coming in for 10.30, and the argument to me always was: "Duwayne doesn't have to be home", until whatever time it was, "so why do I have to be home, because it isn't really that late?" And I told him straight: "What Duwayne and his parents do is up to them, but you are our child, and I expect you to be in because you have school the next day." He found that Duwayne had the freedom to come and go as he wanted and, I suppose, that he wanted the same.

On the Thursday, I arrived home at about 9 o'clock. I got indoors and Stuart was awake, so I went up to see him. I talked to him about what he had been doing while I had been away. I went in to see Georgina who was asleep. I had a bath and we had something to eat. We sat and watched ITV news, because it was 10 o'clock, followed by the local news. At that time I was thinking: "I wish that Stephen would hurry up and come home, because I was really tired and I wanted to go to bed, and I didn't want to go to bed until I knew that he was home. I watched the news, and then the local news and, just as that finished, I remember getting up to go to the bathroom and the door knocked, and I thought: "Okay, Stephen is home." I could hear voices downstairs and I heard Stephen's name mentioned, so I went down.

As I got to the front door I couldn't see who was at the door, because I couldn't see past Neville who was in the way. I moved Neville aside and I saw the family from around the back, Joey Shepherd and his father and brother. He had come to tell us how Stephen had been attacked. He didn't know how seriously Stephen had been hurt. All he said was it was at the bus stop and the Welcome Inn pub. That is all he said. Then the father said to get some information perhaps it would be best to phone the police and see what they could tell us. They were at the door for just a short time. So I went inside and dialled 999, because I didn't know the local police station number. What they told me over the phone was, "It is news to us, we don't know of any sort of incident." I said to the operator that I had just been told that my son had been involved in an accident down the road and I wanted to know if they could tell me anything about it. I gave them the name of the road and the pub and all of that and they said it was news to them. They hadn't heard of any incident and they couldn't give me any information.

We decided to leave. I wasn't dressed, but I suppose just the thought of something having happened to Stephen, I just put on my overcoat and I went out. I remember Stuart coming downstairs. He brought my trainers and things for me and he had his coat on and he said he was coming too and I said he couldn't because Georgina would be in the house by herself so he had to stay and we left straight away. We stopped by the traffic lights at the top of Shooters Hill Road. Neville was driving and at that time of night there is hardly any traffic. We went over the lights, past the pub and the bus stop. The bus stop is further down there on the left hand side. We passed there. There is a road, I'm not sure of its name, but I think it is the first turning on the left after the bus stop. We got as far as there but we still couldn't see anything.

At that time we looked down the road and on Friday night just gone when I was driving down, I noticed that you can see all the way down to Well Hall roundabout. You can't see the roundabout itself but if there were blue lights flashing or anything happening you would be able to see it. We didn't notice anything. We couldn't see anything on the Thursday night. We went right as far as that road but we couldn't see anything. We turned around and I said to Neville, "They must have gone to the hospital" because Brook Hospital is not far away. I thought, "Well, that is where they will have gone". I don't



remember if we physically looked down the road, but I think we probably would have done because it is straight in front of you and you would be able to see it. We saw no lights or anything.

We turned around and we just thought. “Well, probably they had gone to the hospital under their own steam. We didn’t think anything serious had happened because we couldn’t see any evidence of it. I thought that Stephen was hurt but I didn’t think anything as serious as it was.

I know that for a long time beforehand I used to talk to Stephen about the dangers of being out and the dangers of the police as well because of stories that you hear that used to frighten me. The stories that you would hear would be about walking on the street on your own with your friends or whatever and the police would stop you and bundle you into the back of the van and beat up the kids. That is the story that would be going around, especially with black children.

I would tell Stephen that when he was walking down the road he should do so with the traffic going into the opposite direction so he could see when cars were coming and if there was any traffic and then there was more chance of getting away. That is the sort of thing I would tell him. I would also tell him if he was travelling on a train never ever sit in the carriage by himself and to sit in an open carriage. Stephen’s attitude towards the police was always: “Well, if I’m not doing anything wrong how could they do that to me?” I used to say to him from what I am hearing you don’t have to be doing anything. I didn’t trust the police, I never have done and I certainly don’t now. Stephen didn’t have that mistrust, however, because as far as he was concerned if he wasn’t doing anything wrong he had nothing to worry about. That was his attitude. He had never been in any sort of trouble. He had never been in any sort of trouble with the police. He had never been arrested or even spoken to the police. He never had any dealings with them at all. I don’t think that Stephen would know what to do if he had because he had never had anything to do with them.

Because of how we lived as a family we got on with people. Our immediate next door neighbour were a white family and we got on with them very well. The children were the same age as my children. We lived in each other’s houses and we had no problems.

By 1993 there had been three murders in our area. I wasn’t aware of them all. I was aware, of course, of the Roland Adams one because Stephen knew Roland and that was a big thing for him. They were having a march or something and he wanted to be there. I was very worried for him because Thamesmead is an area you always hear about with racism connected to it, it is always happening down there. I remember saying to him: “I don’t want you to go” because he would be a stranger to the area and a strange face and if anything happened they would pick him up quite easily. He had a strong conviction where that was concerned because it was his friend and he told me “no” and in fact he actually went. I felt really frightened that Roland had been killed for no reason but I presume at the same time you hear it, and until it happens to you it doesn’t really sink in. The fear has always been there.

I have always been worried for Stephen. Always him more so, because Stephen was a very independent person and he liked going out. He went out with his friends up Central London and he knew a lot of places. I wouldn’t say that he was exactly inquisitive, but he wanted to know what his surroundings were like.

Going back to that night we turned to go to Brook Hospital. We drove to the hospital. When we got there I won’t swear that I noticed the police car there, perhaps I did, but I can’t really remember. All that was on my mind was Stephen. Neville dropped me outside the ambulance entrance, Accident & Emergency Department. I remember walking - because the hospital is somewhere that I have been several times, it is a hospital that I know - I walked through the doors and I turned right.

Because the ambulance entrance is much further than the Casualty Department it is that bit further to walk. I turned right and I walked down to the Casualty place and I think there were just one or two people sitting there, nobody that I knew, because all I was looking for was Stephen. When I first came through the door I could see a black boy standing in front of me and I saw a police officer next to them standing there. I didn't recognise the black boy, but now I know it was Duwayne. At the time all I was looking for was Stephen, so I wouldn't have noticed. I would have passed anybody by. I didn't have to pass them to go to the Casualty Department, though, because they were further down. I walked down and I looked in the waiting area but I couldn't see Stephen.

I was turning around to go back through the front door again when Neville came walking in. I was going to tell Neville that Stephen was not there, I had decided in my mind that he was not there. I didn't see any medical people about, or anyone. All I was looking for was Stephen. I didn't go to the enquiries counter, I didn't even notice whether there was one or not.

When Neville walked in he recognised Duwayne straight away. He walked up to Duwayne and said something to him and it was then that I recognised him. I went over to Duwayne and asked him what happened and where Stephen was. At that point some people from the medical team came out. There was a man, someone in green, I think. The medical team came out with him. I'm not really certain, I think they came out of the examining rooms opposite where Duwayne was standing and walked over to Duwayne and I think the man in green asked what they hit him with. I'm not certain if the iron bar was mentioned by Duwayne, but I can remember hearing about an iron bar. That was what they asked him about.

I started asking them questions like: "Where is Stephen? Can we see him?" . They said they were working on him. I must have asked three or four times if we could see him and they kept saying they were working on him. We were shown into a room, a family waiting room or something and I remember not sitting down. I was quite anxious and that was when I went off to phone my sister. In the room at the time it was just me and Neville. I don't think Duwayne came into the room at the point. I know eventually he came in but not at first.

Neville and I didn't speak to each other much. I said to them that I couldn't just sit there so I went and got some change to phone my sister. That was the only phone call I made. I told her that we were at the hospital and that Stephen had been attacked. I couldn't tell her anything because I didn't know anything and she said that she would come down. By the time I put the phone down and went back to the room Neville had gone to phone his cousin so I stayed in the room on my own.

When Neville came back I think Duwayne was shown in then. I remember when he sat down. I asked him what was happening and what was going on. He was very confused and didn't make any sense. He said that they had been coming from my brother's place and that it was not long after that, but I couldn't make any sense of anything else. Half the time he wasn't talking anyway. He was just extremely anxious. He couldn't sit still. He wasn't with a police officer in the room. The police didn't come into the room. the police officer that was near Duwayne as we came in was standing outside. He was a uniformed man, but I'm not sure of any of his features. I couldn't tell you if he was dark or blonde or anything but he was about the same height as Duwayne and of medium build.

Neville, Duwayne and I stayed in the room but we weren't there for very long. I think it was about 5 or 10 minutes, it didn't seem that long. At that stage I thought Stephen was seriously hurt, but not fatally. When I spoke to my sister all I could tell her was that Stephen had been attacked and we were at the hospital. I didn't know anything more. I didn't know how serious hurt he was because I hadn't seen him and nobody had told us anything about him, nobody had said what had happened to him. As for being stabbed, that's the last thing I expected. I never expected that.

We were waiting still in the family room and two people came in, one was a ginger haired woman. She was a staff nurse and I presume the doctor, was also a woman. They said that Stephen was dead. I looked at them as if to say: "How do you mean he's dead? He can't be dead." I don't remember what I did then. I can't remember whether I cried out or anything. That was it.

I was sitting at the time when we were told and asked if we could see him. I didn't believe that he was dead and I was saying: "No, he is not dead. He is not dead. He can't be." I don't remember how Neville reacted. I remember Duwayne because he was sitting next to me. He let out a cry. While we were sitting there the wall was next to us. There were three seats and they were flush to the wall. Duwayne was on the end by the door. Neville was in the corner. Duwayne was by the entrance and he was literally climbing the walls when he heard that Stephen had died. Nobody did anything to comfort him and not long after that the police took him away. I don't remember him going to see Stephen with us at all. We were told Stephen was dead and we asked to see him. The doctor said we had to wait because they were preparing him or something. By that time my sister had arrived with her husband. We told them that Stephen had died while we were in the family room. We all sat there for a while. A few other members of the family arrived. At the time I didn't know, but my sister had phoned my brother and nephew. I remember my brother turning up so there was myself, Neville, my sister, her husband and my brother. They were the only ones that were there when we went to see Stephen. There were no police officers.

The next thing I remember was us seeing Stephen. We were shown into the room where he was, the examination room, Neville, myself, my sister and her husband. The nurse took us in and I'm sure she had her arms round me and my sister was on the other side. I don't remember anyone else being in the room. When we got in we saw Stephen lying there. He looked as though he was just sleeping. He was covered from his neck downwards and I didn't move the covers. I just kissed him and more or less cuddled him. I remember the cut on his chin but I didn't take the cover off him. We stood there for a while and then went back into the family room and that's when the other family members arrived. After we had seen Stephen, my nephew came and his sister and both my brothers arrived at the same time. We were in the family room but there was nobody from Neville's side of the family there.

Even at this point it hadn't hit me what had happened. I was completely numb. I don't remember thinking anything. I suppose eventually what came to me was the fact that Stuart and Georgina were at home. Neville drove us home, just the two of us in the car. My sister couldn't follow because they had left their children on their own. We got home by about midnight because I remember checking the time. It was either midnight or just before. Stuart was still awake and I told him. I told him that Stephen had died, what else can you say? Stuart just cried and cried. Georgina was asleep and I suppose it was at that stage that I took the decision not to wake her.

That night Neville's cousin arrived with her husband at the house. I'm not sure what time it was but Duwayne's mother also came to the house with a friend who I don't know but I had seen around. Neville opened the door because I was frightened of ever opening the door again. They came upstairs into the living room and she said that she had been to see Duwayne at the police station and the only thing that stuck in my mind was that she said she was glad it wasn't Duwayne and that was it.

The other person who was with her said that she had a son and that Stephen knew her son. She knew us but she wasn't someone I had much contact with. I don't know why Duwayne's mum came around. She would have had our address from a friend. I presume she came around in sympathy but at the time it didn't come across as that.

Eventually, I went to bed. I didn't sleep. I just lay there. I couldn't sleep. Nothing else happened that night.



The next morning when Georgina woke up Neville was on the phone. I'm not sure who he was talking to but various people, telling them what had happened to Stephen because I didn't want to speak to anyone. Georgina woke up as usual, I didn't want to wake her. She could hear voices talking and she came into the living room and looked at me and said: "Mum, what's wrong?" She could hear Neville downstairs talking and she went down. She probably heard the conversation over the phone, she just went mad. She started screaming and screaming and ran up the stairs to me. I held her and she kept repeating: "It is not true. It is not true. Where is Stephen?" So I told her. It was really strange behaviour. It was as if she had taken it in but not really taken it in. This was about 7 o'clock in the morning.

Georgina had an alarm in her room so she would wake up with the boys getting up in the morning. The routine was that Stephen would be up first: he went in the bathroom first, followed by Stuart and because she was the youngest and because her school was local and she didn't have to be up until much later, her routine was always that she was the last one in the bathroom. Georgina and Stuart then went off to School. I told them about staying at home but they said they weren't staying at home. I phoned a friend of mine to tell her what had happened and she phoned some friends and by 8 o'clock they came to the house. In fact three of them arrived. They arrived and Georgina and Stuart were saying they wanted to go to school and I was trying to persuade them not to go. They said they wanted to go so my friends said they would walk them to school and let the school know what had happened. One friend with Stuart and the other two went with Georgina. Georgina was due to go off on a school trip for a week on the Monday but, of course, I didn't want to let her out of my sight so I just said: "You are not going", and she said "I want to go". At this time we let the school know what was happening and they said they would keep an eye on her and if she wanted to come home at any point they would bring her home. She was only 10 at this time and Stuart had just had his 16th birthday.

"The rest of the Friday people started coming to the house. After 8 o'clock or 9 o'clock the police came. I don't know who from the police arrived but somebody did. We didn't inform anybody that we didn't want to be disturbed by the police on the Thursday night and no police officers spoke to us on the Thursday night. The first contact we had with the police or knew of the police officers' involvement was the Friday morning after about 9 am. I would never have said that I didn't want to be contacted by the police. Something like that of course you want to know what happened, and you want to know straight away what would happen. I wanted to know. If the police had arrived in the middle of the night to speak to us we would have been happy to speak to them. We would never have turned anybody away. No officer spoke to us at the hospital. I didn't see any as we left the hospital.

On the Friday whoever opened the door told us the police were there. I don't remember speaking to them on the Friday morning. I can't remember what was said. I know that they came in the morning because it sticks in my mind but I don't know any of the conversation.

I remember Palma Black from the ARA being at our place. She was introduced to us but how she got to our place I don't know. Nobody from our family would have contacted her. I understand that Ros Howells was contacted, I presume by the police or hospital because she is a member of the Greenwich Race Unit. She may have contacted ARA, although not directly. I think she would have spoken to Vicki Morse, who is a counsellor in Greenwich, and I understand now that Vicki Morse is an ARA member. I didn't speak to Palma Black directly when she was at our house. I was just aware she was there. I had no real feelings towards her being there or not.

On the Friday I was still not aware of how Stephen had been attacked and murdered. All I knew is that he had been stabbed. I would have thought I was informed by the hospital. I was not told that he was stabbed as far as I can recall but that was my understanding.



By the Friday I knew that the murder had been racist, I think that had come from Duwayne's mother but I am not sure how I knew that. At the time I didn't think about it. Neville was going to a press conference. I think when the officers came to the house in the morning, it was because they wanted a press conference to be held, and he was the one doing it because I didn't feel that I could do anything like that, so he was the one who went along. I saw the press conference on the television. I can't remember much more about the Friday except that there were a lot of people in the house. Most of them friends and relatives.

On the Saturday I remember we got up and we were going to see Stephen. I think that was arranged on the Friday, probably because we asked to see him when the police came. I don't remember being told that it wasn't possible. I don't remember being told that. On the Saturday I remember a woman officer, not in uniform, a Linda Holden came, she was one of the liaison officers. I remember her coming to the house and we travelled in the car with her, both Neville and myself and a friend. I remember that also part of the group were my sister and her husband and some other members of the family came along. We travelled with DC Holden and I found out that the driver was an off-duty policeman, the driver who had stopped Duwayne on the night of Stephen's death.

We drove down to Greenwich mortuary, which is off the Greenwich High Road. We were in a room with quite a few glass panels. We were on the opposite side of the glass panel and we could see through that as they brought his body in. They brought him to the window and I must have asked because I wanted to touch them. At first the Coroner's office or the police said no we couldn't. I think I wanted to see the wounds and everything because someone else had told us that they had arrived later at the hospital and they had been in to see them and that he had pin pricks on his arm. I didn't know what this was suggesting - all over his arm - but this concerned me because I wanted to know what had been done to him. I didn't tell them why I wanted to see them but eventually they allowed only Neville and myself in. Neville asked then if his friend could come in because we wanted things explained to us and his friend knew about medical things, he had worked in hospitals and we trusted him. We wanted them to tell us and hoped he could explain what these pin pricks were because we didn't trust anyone else to tell us the truth.

We were allowed to go behind the glass panel and saw Stephen who was on a trolley covered. I took the covers off to look at him. By then they had carried out a post-mortem on him because you would see the wounds going right down the middle of his chest. That's when I noticed the stab wounds. I checked for little pin pricks. There were loads of marks on his arm but Neville's friend wasn't sure what they were. It may have been treatment he had at the hospital and if it was maybe they did quite a few and they couldn't find a vein. We never really found out what it was. As well as that, we wanted to see the head wounds. He had a bruise on his face to one side of his cheek, probably from when he fell. I think we were there for about 40-45 minutes.

Then we went and drove via the spot where he died; not where he was stabbed but where he died. I don't remember if we asked for that, or if the police officers suggested it, but we went via that way. We were told that he died by a spot near the tree, and we were pointed up from there to where he was attacked at the junction of Dickson Road. At that point I couldn't believe that he had managed to run so far with the wounds that he had.

The Saturday is the first recollection that I have of DC Holden. I don't think it was every made clear what her role was. Later it became clear that she was supposed to be there in a supporting role. We saw her several times on the Saturday, but as far as I'm concerned, once they had left the house, they didn't come back. They dropped us off and I could swear they didn't come back to the house. I remember it wasn't long, and Palma was at the house. If she was there when we left, I'm not sure. She was just sitting there with, I think, a Carl Booth from the ARA, but I'm not certain if he had been there

in the morning. Members of our family and friends were taking all the phone calls. I didn't take any calls. We had a book, but I cannot remember when that came in. It was my friend's idea to make a note of everybody who called, because she must have noticed how many calls we were getting, and inquiries. We just wanted to keep a record of people who were calling, as well as people knocking on the door; not members of the family, but people who we didn't know, who were coming.

On Saturday the Anti-Nazi League came to the house and the Black Panthers; the ANL arrived with some money that they had collected. I think I met them directly. I thought it was a surprise that they had gone out to collect money because they had heard that Stephen had died, and they were out there and, I presume, in the area of Eltham. I thought it was really strange that people that we didn't even know were giving us money. When the Black Panthers came I found it really frightening. They were dressed in hoods with dark glasses. I think I opened the door when they knocked and was shocked seeing these people from wherever and I think I went inside and sent Neville to the door to talk to them. While Neville was at the door talking to them Palma said to me that we did not want to get involved with them as they are dangerous. They had attacked her in the car park, which frightened me even more. I couldn't really understand why they had come. Palma Black was there every day.

On the Saturday my mother came down, which was also a traumatic thing, having to explain to her about her grandson.

On the Sunday we went to church in the morning. The people at the church knew what had happened because on Friday members of the church had come to see us. The news must have spread quite quickly and quite wide. I felt that I needed to go to church. They say that in times of trouble you turn to whatever you feel comfortable with, and I felt comfortable and I wanted to go, so we all as a family went. Neville, who doesn't often go to church, also came. My mother also came with Stuart and Georgina. When we came back from church, I remember a lot of people were around and hardly anywhere could I be on my own. There just wasn't any room. I remember David Cruise. He used to be the Minister of Trinity Church and he had known Stephen since he was six or seven. I spoke to him on the Sunday because somebody from the church would have contacted him. We went to the boys' bedroom to talk, because at the time every other room in the house was occupied. I remember the police being there, and I think we spoke to them in our bedroom. I remember a letter arrived and David read a letter from the Taffes, who were the couple who were at the scene when Stephen collapsed. He read the letter to us. It was really comforting, I felt, to know that somebody was with him because I think my question was, and still is: did he know that he was dying? And who did he ask for? And how was he? And was he frightened? Those are all the things that I want to know. In some ways the letter had said that he was calm and at peace, so it was reassuring to some degree to know that he hadn't been frightened.

Nothing else stands out in particular of that Sunday. I do remember a man, who was supposed to have been some security man, came. He was frightening as well. He was part of the ARA people with Palma and Marc Wadsworth.

My relationship with Palma and Marc was that I didn't know them or anything about them. They were trying to reassure me that they were there to support. I remember seeing Palma forever using the phone, and I pointed out to her it was our phone bill. She said not to worry about anything; that they would help us through everything.

On the Monday morning Georgina went off for a week, and I think my sister went with her to the school trip and Stuart went to school. From then on someone always went with them to school, even Stuart. Carl Booth would walk Stuart to school because it is walking distance. Practical support was being provided by the ARA. Nothing further stands out about the Monday.

On Tuesday, I can't remember anything specific. I remember that in between all the times, the police were there on a regular basis, more or less every day. They would have been Holden and Bevan. They never actually told us what their role was. We were never given any up-to-date stuff; we didn't know what was happening with the investigation or even if there was one. The only thing I could gather from them being there was that they wanted information: they wanted information about Stephen. They used to ask us about his friends and whether he was in a gang. They asked us about gloves that they found and a cap that was in his bag or something. All that was coming across all the time was: "Who are the people in your house; and what are their names; and what are they to do with Stephen?" We were never given any information. We were never told that they were there and that we could go to them if we wanted to know about the investigation. Linda Holden left her mobile number with Neville.

I remember that Imran Khan was representing our interests. I was first aware of this on the Sunday. I didn't think it was unusual. Mind you, it is difficult to say what is unusual or usual; you don't really know what the norm is; you don't know what procedures are to follow. But I was just really glad that there was somebody there who could find out on our behalf what was going on. We were just not being given any information. The police did not come to us and say: "Your son has died. This is how he died. This is what happened. This is how it happened." We don't know the full story about how he died and we weren't being told that his death was being investigated. At least I was never told that.

The first time we started to get an idea that information was coming to the house, surrounding names and details of the murder, was during the first week. I can't remember the exact day. I haven't actually spoken to anyone directly regarding this. It was through somebody. I understood that people were saying that they knew who had committed the murder, and that they had information and that they felt that they needed to come and tell us. This information was all kept in the book. I don't know when the book started, but it was from the time when people started telephoning to give information; calls came in and we kept a note of the messages. As far as I can remember, information being passed to the house was passed to Imran Khan, who in turn passed it on to the police. As days went by we were never made aware of anything that was happening. That was the most frustrating thing. We asked the officers that come to the house, and we found that at one point, a week or so later, Bevan said to us, in a very sarcastic way, that we should go to the incident room and see how hard they were working on the case. I said I didn't want to hear that; I didn't want to see the Incident Room; that wasn't going to tell me anything: I just wanted to know exactly what was going on: who had been caught; had anybody been caught; had any suspects been arrested? They must have an idea of who they were, because I was getting all of this information that the boys were known to the police. This information was coming to my house that these boys were well known in the area; that the police knew they had knives; that they always clean the knives in the front room; and that police have seen them; and that this was something that the police were aware of. I felt that the police were not doing anything and they were too busy investigating Stephen.

Eventually, we heard a rumour that the police were at Duwayne's place all the time as well, questioning him and anybody who visited him because he was living on his own. They wanted to know who the visitors were, and all their names, and why they had come, and all of that sort of thing. During that week I didn't have any contact with Duwayne. I heard rumours that he was on his own and I was worried about him because of that. I remember somebody saying that they knew him or his mother well; and I suggested that that person talk to his mother to take him away. I felt that the police were having too much access to him and he had nobody to support him. They would must turn up at his place and I didn't think it was right. He had been through such a lot. He was on his own and he needed adult support. My concern was that he was really vulnerable.

I remember going to a press conference at Woolwich Town Hall, arranged by Marc Wadsworth from the ARA. I think this was before Georgina's birthday on the 30th April. Holden came to the house on



the afternoon of that day, which was the time that she usually came. I can't remember what the discussion was about, but we were asked as parents to send a letter to Georgina to keep in contact while she was away. It suddenly dawned on me that it was her birthday. Usually presents and cards are bought in advance, so I must have bought her card but not a present when Stephen died; and I remember saying that I hadn't got to post her birthday card as I had wished and, even though she was returning on that day, I wanted to do that. Linda Holden offered to take it down for me and post it. That surprised me because that was the last thing I expected. I thought it was good of her. I read somewhere that I didn't thank her for that. To me this is out of character, and there is no way I would have been so rude and arrogant about the whole thing, and at this time I still trusted her.

The first time I went out after Stephen's death was on the 30th April. I went to the shops in Woolwich. There is a car park above the Sainsbury's and that was the first time I drove and went out. I went out with my sisters, my two sisters and my cousin. The four of us travelled in the car. We drove into Woolwich. I looked for somewhere to park, and I was going up to the next level and I could see a space but you needed to get round and round to get up to it. As I drove up and on to the next level, there was a woman and her daughter pushing a trolley, and I saw them and I stopped. They stopped. I thought they would move on. They started to move. We went back and forwards, and I suddenly said: "What are you doing?" I said: "What are you doing", in the car to myself so she wouldn't have heard it, but I think she saw my gesture which was. I remember she made a remark. I can't remember what it was, but it was definitely racist and everybody in the car just got angry because of what had happened to Stephen. They were saying: "Let us out", and was trying to park the car. All three of them were asking to be let out to challenge her. I went down to the parked car and they got out and they ran down to her. I was not in earshot of any of the stuff and I didn't see any of the things that went on, but I was told later that my sister had said to her: "It was one of you bastards that killed my nephew", and her reply was: "If he hadn't been here, he would still be alive", meaning if he wasn't in this country, he would still be alive. What do you say? What could you say? Before they approached her the white woman had got a brick. She had got a brick from the boot of her car. She was holding the brick and it was like: "If you come anywhere near me, this is what you will get." All they could do was take the woman's registration, which they did. They came back and told me about it, and they told Imran Khan the details and he reported it to the police. My sister and me and the others made statements on that night, or a few days later, but as far as I know nothing had happened with this incident. Weeks later we were told at Greenwich Race Office, where there was a meeting with the police, some sort of community meeting - I think it was Philpot who told us that no action would be taken, because we had to understand that at this time the white woman had had a bereavement. So that was the end of it.

By the end of the first week there was disappointment with the liaison officers. Their attitude when they came to the house was just checking up to see who was there, anyone who was of interest because they were more concerned with the people in the house than they were with us. They would see us and in fact I have read, that they claimed they could not get any access to us. It is complete rubbish. Whenever they came down they would see us. They were shown into the living room and it was just us in the living room with nobody else. There were no organisations. We would make room to see them. My sister may have been there, but certainly no organisations. Each time they came they were shown up to wherever we were and they would ask questions about Stephen. The problem with liaison officers is that they were only interested in the people who were in the house. The people in our house were all black. The people who killed my son were white. Why should they be interested in the people who were in the house? It has been suggested that they were looking to build up a picture of Stephen, but that is not what I would say. What I would say is they were gathering information of interest about the people in the house, and that as black people in the house, there must have been something criminal or whatever. If they were trying to build up a picture of Stephen, it was simply to see if he was in any sort of mischief. They never asked us any questions about Stephen, about him as a young child. There was nothing genuine that they asked. There was none of that.

Their attitude towards the family as a whole was patronising. Once incident sticks out in my mind, which was with Bevan. He was in the living room one day, and I think I must have been in my usual mode of asking: “What is happening? What is going on?”, and how we have not been given any information and: “Has anybody been caught?” He started going on again about how hard they were working and he didn’t know if we would understand, that the procedure is not what we think it is: they have to ask questions and do this and that. We said that we had been passing on information and we wanted to know what was being done about that information. We were told to speak to someone else as they couldn’t give us that information. The whole thing, how they were talking: I don’t know, I can’t say that, if it was a black police officer, it would have been better. I mean, how many black police officers do you know anyway? How many black police officers do you see within the force? So I don’t know who they would use for a family like ours. Perhaps it would have been different. That is something that we will never know. I do think, though, that the liaison officers did not understand us. I would say that they came with a preconceived idea of what black families are like, so they had that notion in their heads to start off with. They came with the idea that we wouldn’t ask questions and that we would just accept what we were told; and the fact that we were asking questions and that we wanted to know everything, is something they didn’t anticipate would happen.

We were only asking questions like: “From the information we had given them, was it useful? Were any of the names of any use? What happened? Where they able to go around to the houses? Are these people really known by the police?” I wanted to know, if the police officers knew these boys, were they actually capable of doing what was alleged they had done to Stephen? I had the feeling that, if people in the community knew what was going on and who was responsible and were trying to tell us, that the police should arrest them. What was said was that the police knew of them cleaning their knives and thing, and all the other attacks and all the intimidation in the area. I would have assumed that, during that first night, if they knew all that, they would have arrested somebody. In days that followed, information kept coming to us before, we had information, we knew no names; we knew nothing about the area, nothing about the boys, nothing at all. I knew nothing. Once the information started coming in through the questions, it was the question following: “Why has no one been arrested?” It started dawning on me that, if it had been the other way around that night, somebody would have been arrested, regardless of whether they had done it or not. We were never asked by any of the organisations supporting us to ask the police for information, or that they wanted to be present when the police spoke to me and, anyway, being the person that I am, I would never have allowed that to happen.

Within the first few weeks we then heard that the boys were now hanging around out house. I heard from a relative. She was one of the people last to have left the house on that particular night. It had gone midnight, and when she reached home, she rang me. She said that when she left the house she had seen some boys coming from different entrances to our road. There were several entrances to our road. She didn’t say which entrance exactly but, as she came out of the door and walked to her car, she was aware of two boys turning the corner and coming towards her. She then saw another two boys from another corner walking towards her. She got frightened then and then she ran to her car and shut the door. She said she drove a little way and looked in the mirror and saw that the four boys were standing together across from our house just starting at our house. After that she stopped at Shooters Hill Police Station and she told them what she saw. They said that they were unaware of any murder having taken place in the area. She went home and she rang us. She spoke to Neville. We then spoke to Imran Khan to tell him. No police cars were sent that I was aware of. I was later told that a car was sent. Nobody knocked on our door or said anything to us. That incident really frightened me. How did they know where we lived? Then earlier on during the week I think our address was in the papers.



There was another incident where our tyres were slashed, that was done during the night. I know it was a Sunday but I am not sure of the date. We had started to go away at weekends because it was the only break we were getting from people being at the house. We would spend the weekend with Neville's cousin's. We came back on the Sunday night and they had slashed our car. That was reported to the police but they never took a statement about any of that stuff that has happened.

Our concerns were such that we then started making inquiries to move from that address. I made enquiries with Greenwich Council. I remember we were having weekly meetings with the police so this was after 6th May and I remember telling the Police about the boys watching our house and Illsley's remarks were: "What boys? What house?" as though we wanted to brush it aside. As far as he was concerned it was nothing serious and we were just being paranoid. It was as if to say we were being stupid, not paranoid, but stupid.

There was a press conference at Woolwich Town Hall which I think was being organised by Palma and Marc. I remember being asked to attend by them, so Neville and I attended. My sister may have been there and Roz, I think. I know that Imran was. This was done to highlight the fact that time was passing, nobody was arrested and nothing seemed to be taking place. It was just a request for information. We didn't ask for this to be arranged.

There was then an invitation to meet President Mandela. We went because we saw him as a way of highlighting the fact that the British government and the people in power here were not interested, and that nobody had come to visit us except for the local MP, Peter Bottomley. I remember saying to him during the week of the murder: "Does the Prime Minister know about my son?" He said, "Well, I don't think so." I said: "Why not?" and he couldn't answer. Nobody was showing an interest that a young man had been killed and that the papers, even though they ran the story, there was nothing on the Friday, but they ran the story on the Saturday. Then you had the London bombing and that was it, no more mention of Stephen.

When we went to meet Mr Mandela we talked about Stephen being killed and that the Government, the people, the police weren't doing anything, his killers weren't being brought to justice. We felt, perhaps, I suppose we were a bit naive at the time, thinking that perhaps this meeting with any official on our behalf we may be able to bring that up. He went on to say about black life being cheap in South Africa and that how he thought it was different in this country. He didn't realise it was still the same as what was happening there. He was quite concerned that this had happened. Nobody showed any interest in that.

As a result of that meeting the following day they arrested somebody. We weren't told who was arrested but we were informed that two boys had been arrested. I remember when the first arrest was made we weren't told as a family, we were told it by the media. When the second arrest was made because we complained that the last time we had been the last to hear and we had to hear about it just like everybody else on the news, on the next arrest Bevan phoned to tell us that two more boys would be arrested but to keep it quiet. Within half an hour of being told that it was on the news.

Another incident a week after the incident the GACARA, Greenwich Action for Racial Equality organised the candlelit vigil. I heard about that from Palma, I think, probably. The information was coming through them that GACARA was doing something with the schools. I remember a big fuss was being made that the family had not been consulted and they had done this thing off their own back. At the time I wasn't concerned that we were not informed, I hadn't given it any thought. This was before things like this started to happen regularly. I was aware that Imran had been asked to write to organisations to say: "Please consult the family before they do anything."

I was never approached by any organisation directly to support but I was aware of GACARA and different groups. Because we were not personally taking calls we were told a lot of stuff that was happening. I knew from a lot of other people who were there. If anyone from GACARA came to the house - I couldn't say specifically who, I don't remember meeting anyone or any letter or any phone call from GACARA that I took - I never took any calls but I was always told or it would be in the message book.

There were then our regular meetings with Philpot. I went to those meetings with members of the family. Our first meeting with them, which I can recall was on 6th May, because it was after we met Mandela, so I remember it was the very first meeting. Before the meeting with the police I remember being concerned that although they had all the information that had been sent from us, from my own mind I decided to write down the names, so I got the book, I wrote all the names on a piece of paper and I took it with me. I remember walking into the room where Philpot and Illsley were. I handed the paper to Illsley. I don't know why I handed it to him. I sat on the chair. My sister was there, Imran Khan and Neville. I don't know if Ros was there but I remember sitting very quiet listening to what was happening around me and watching Illsley, having given him the paper, to see what he was doing. That's when I saw him fold the paper up so small and I think on that meeting - I don't think I said anything because it was too much of a shock. He rolled the piece of paper up in a ball in his hand. I was so shocked by what I saw.

He didn't tell us anything. He wasn't giving any information away. He wasn't telling us how far he had got with the investigation or what was happening or who they suspected of doing the murder. Meeting were taking place with him and not the liaison officers because we were getting fed up with them. They weren't telling us anything or giving us any information. They were not saying what was happening with the information we passed on. We told nothing about what was going on. The decision not to use the liaison officers came much later. When we had the first meeting they were still coming to the house. No one told us that we should not use them. Perhaps in the first week I wasn't being very coherent or taking an active part in what was happening. As the week progressed I was getting more and more angry because nothing was happening. We were not told anything. Nobody was being arrested and it just dawned on me at the time that they had no intention of doing anything about Stephen's murder and that's when I started taking an active role at the meetings with Philpot. Ros and Carl were there, I think because they were members of the community and because Ros is a worker from the Greenwich Racial Equality Unit. They would have come possibly on Neville's invitation but it would have been discussed beforehand. I don't remember saying I wanted them to be there or inviting them but Neville may have asked them to come.

When I eventually found out that someone had been charged with the murder it was like a relief. At long last something is going to happen, someone has been arrested in connection with the murder. What followed was "If any of the names had been given, was it one of those boys who was going to be charged?" I didn't attend the Magistrates' Court when they were being produced, either we didn't know about it or we weren't asked to go. Then there as the question of the release of Stephen's body. At one point they said that they didn't want to release his body until his killers had been caught. We were told in a police meeting that the suspects, all had rights to their own post-mortem being done. When the first lot was arrested, a post-mortem was done and when the second lot were arrested there was a rumour but nobody could decide whether it was going to happen. We were told after the second post-mortem that his body would be released so we could start making funeral arrangements.

These arrangements were that he would be buried in Jamaica because if he had been buried here it would have been on Cemetery Lane, Charlton where he used to walk. That was the route to Elvin's house. Even late at night I used to ask him if he was frightened but he would never let on that he was. It was discussed where we would bury him and Jamaica came up. I made enquiries and then it was, where in Jamaica? Some of the names I was not comfortable with and I think someone said that they

bury people on top of each other and I didn't want that. There was a plot of land, though that belonged to myself and my aunt and I remember ringing my aunt in Florida and saying: "Could we bury him there?" My grandmother is already buried there so there was no objection to that. We said okay, so my sister made most of the arrangements for Jamaica.

Near to the time when his body should have been released there was a question mark that it might not because the second lot might want to do their own post-mortem. They couldn't decide whether they were going to or not. The date was drawing near, it was 12th or 18th June. A memorial service was held in the Trinity Church and I had a lot to do with that organisation. I decided what I wanted. This was held because he went to that church and to give the people the opportunity, members of the family and people who couldn't attend the funeral in Jamaica to attend some service.

I went to Jamaica in the knowledge that people had been charged with the murder. The British Embassy in Jamaica was very strange considering that nobody in this country was interested in Stephen's death but the High Commissioner, he attended Stephen's funeral. One of his officers met us on the plane, but they had (which was really funny) no jurisdiction so they had to queue with everybody else and it took forever to get out. We had to get through Customs and everything. They came around to the house where we were staying. I think Neville went on his own to the Embassy and when he asked if he could attend the funeral, which he did, he made several contacts while we were there and we were invited to their place for tea. At the time his wife was out of the country, but Derek Milton invited us to the house and even let the children go swimming. They had a pool. I understand that he had found out from Paul Boateng about Stephen. I remember him saying that he would contact them to make things easier for us. It didn't because they didn't have any jurisdiction but they did what they could for us. No government authority from this country contacted us as far as I know.

It was at some point towards the end of July, a Thursday, that we found out that charges had been dropped. I was shocked because this was a phone call. I don't know if Imran Khan or my sister made the call. I think it was Imran Khan and I spoke to him. I was angry and I was shocked and I wanted to know what the hell was going on. Why were the charges being dropped? We had no idea they were dropping charges or why. When we returned to the UK it was to the story of them releasing the boys.

Neville didn't want to stay at our house so we never went back to our house at Llanover Road. It was all to do with the fear of what had happened and all the stuff with the car, the boys and they knew where we lived and what we looked like. They could identify us but we couldn't identify them. So personally I always felt like a target. We stayed at Neville's cousins for several weeks and then we stayed with Ros.

Greenwich didn't do anything to help us by re-housing us. We went to meet with the Assistant Housing Director Cedric Boston. He came before we left for Jamaica in June and the proposal was that they could swap our house or because we had bought our house it was no longer a council house and he was going to look into whether the council could set up an exchange or something for the same value. We didn't find any alternative accommodation when we came back. There were rumours, apparently, that we were not coming back to this country, that we had heard on our return so there was no point in looking for anywhere for us to live. That thought hadn't crossed our minds. I was doing my degree and my children were at school. There was nothing in the story that we weren't coming back. How could we not come back? There were thoughts that we may eventually move out to live but nothing that we were not coming back straight after we buried Stephen, nothing had ever been said like that to anybody. By then our attitude towards the country had changed but there is no way that I would have upped and walked out with my children in school. Practically you can't do that and no sane person would do that. It is never a question.



Nothing much happened in relation to the case in that year 1993, that was when the first inquest happened in December. There were lots of things going around about information coming forward and the police not acting on the information. I think that is what is being said all along, that information we were giving was not being acted upon. There was a rumour that information was coming up and had only been recently received by the police so they didn't have time to investigate it. We arrived at the inquest with that and it was brought out even more that the police would not have had time to have investigated the new information as it came through that evening. At first they denied having received new information.

By this time we had met with Michael Mansfield because we were concerned that the case had been dropped and nothing had happened so the possibility of a private prosecution was discussed. I was not introduced to any of the police officers and I felt that they were obstructive to the inquest which was adjourned.

Information had allegedly come to Greenwich about the murder, they and we thought the police would apply to get the Inquest adjourned to investigate further information. The police did nothing to assist us and they wanted it to go ahead. Mr Mansfield had to argue hard for it to be adjourned. I felt that the police deliberately did this to try and stop us proceeding with the private prosecution. At this stage we became extremely concerned and we asked for a meeting with Commissioner Condon.

The first time I met Weedon was after we had met the Commissioner. He said how sorry he was about what had happened and how hard they had been working. I pointed out to him that the newspapers said he had spoken to the family when I knew nothing about him or of his existence. I asked him why he spent most of his time doing newspaper interviews and not introducing himself to the family when he had the opportunity but he didn't. He said that it was because there was a lot of activity at the inquest and it was not the right time to introduce himself to us. I felt he should have introduced himself from the time he was put in charge of the case. That would have been the "right" time to have met with us.

The police were not interested in keeping us informed about the investigation. We were simply regarded as irritants. We were never formally told that Illsley had taken over liaison. We never knew who was in charge. As for Weedon we read in the papers that he had been congratulated by us on how well he was doing, before that we didn't know he existed. We didn't actually meet the man until a year later. DAC Osland, we also read about in the papers. He said that if we persisted in accusing the officers of being racist he would recommend that they could sue us. I now see in briefing notes that in July 1993 he said that he was "fed up to the back teeth with the Lawrence family."

When we started our series of meetings with senior officers things did not get much better. I have seen references to our "thirst" for information which I frankly find offensive. This was after all the murder of our son. It was also claimed that the police found dealing with our solicitor a hindrance. Basically we were seen as gullible simpletons. This is best shown by Illsley's comment that I had obviously been primed to ask question. Presumably there is no possibility of me being an intelligent black woman with thoughts of her own who is able to ask questions for herself. We were patronised and fobbed off. As the meetings went on I got more and more angry. I thought the purpose of the meetings was to give us progress reports. But what actually happened was they would effectively say, "Stop questioning us, we are doing everything. That simply wasn't true and it led me to believe then and now they were protecting the suspects. In September 1993 we hoped to get some feedback from the Barker review. We met with him too, he said he couldn't give us a copy of the report but he promised we'd meet again so that he could tell us what he had found out. That was the first and last time we ever saw him.

The second investigation started with meeting Commissioner Condon in April 1994. We discussed the Barker review and it was the first time we met Ian Johnstone. This led to another meeting with Nove and Weedon. I thought the second investigation would have highlighted what had gone on the first time around - what did and did not happen. I expected it to produce enough evidence to charge the boys.

Commander Nove, tried to come across as someone who cared. He gave his personal assurance that he would do everything he could in order to catch the people who were responsible for Stephen's murder, although a year had elapsed and there may be little in the way of evidence, he would do the best they could. I did not believe him 100% but I wanted something to happen. I was getting more information from those officers. Although they were still cautious about the information, they would give us. Eventually we were told about them "taking out a key player", but we were never informed who this was. We were given an idea of what was happening. I don't think we were told in detail about the surveillance that was happening. We did not want all the details, just were the names we gave useful? Yes or no. Even though I was uncertain I had very high hopes of a new squad. My question though was why were they suddenly running round being so helpful - who were they trying to protect and what lay behind it. My concern was the rumours that the first investigation had all gone bad because there was some link between the police and the Defendants. These rumours were everywhere. I therefore thought that a special squad set up from outside the area would be impartial and able to get to the truth. I now feel that I was deceived again. I felt that the second team wanted us to believe that they would get to the bottom of what went on and with their help we would get a conviction. When I think of the hours that our legal team spent down at Shooters Hill and for what? It bore no fruit. What concerns me is that the number of the officers - senior officers - who have been involved - years of experience and at the end of the day we never got further than square one.

There was also little regard for our safety. Even if you ignore all the information coming in, the history of stabbings in the area made these boys known to the police. If they were black, they would have been arrested straightaway just in case, especially if they were known to the police as local troublemakers.

For the majority of this case the boys knew our whereabouts and what we looked like and we didn't know them. I told the police on several occasions how frightened we were and about several incidents, it was not taken seriously. There was the incident with the brick I mentioned before. Our tyres were slashed twice. Some boys were hanging around our house as I mentioned before and we also got threatening letters. There was never any investigation.

When I mentioned these things to Illsley he said "What boys?", "What house?" and when I explained he made a brushing aside gesture with his hand and said, "Oh them, they're just thugs", as if we were over-dramatising things. On one occasion I was at a bus stop and two boys started spitting towards me. They looked at me hard. It was clear that they recognised me. They stared at me and I stared back. I got onto the bus and suddenly became very frightened. I thought they knew me, they would know where I got off the bus, where I lived and I was in danger. It was incidents like this that I kept relating to Illsley and all the time they were thinking the boys needed protecting from us.

When I look back now I feel we were misled in those meetings. We were told there was a wall of silence. We couldn't understand this because people were constantly visiting and phoning our own home giving names and information. All of this at least once, often twice a week was passed to the police. We now also know that the police received a vast amount of information, not only from the public but several police officers via their informants.

I can't believe that if these matters had been investigated properly they couldn't have helped the Inquiry. We asked Illsley whether there could be any connection between the other stabbings and Stephen's killing. He categorically stated no and that they had looked at that. Now we see about a red car that was travelling up and down the scene that had two known racists in it one of whom was connected to the murder of Rolan Adams. The plethora of information about these boys who was in the area, they were known to the police because of the other stabbings that they had committed.

We were still kept in the dark about some things in the second investigation. The police would not tell us exactly what was happening but we heard rumours that things had gone wrong during the first investigation. I think there was some cover up about what was going on.

It was then decided that the Crown Prosecution Service would not take matters further. I felt that we had no choice but take a private prosecution. I don't believe they would have been acquitted if we could have presented everything to the jury.

I believe that the decision we made at the time was the right one because if we had waited we would have had less chance, so the decision was right. The forensic that they should have found, we found. The forensic that matched the fibres from Dobson's jumper we found ourselves. It cost us £10,000 from the Campaign Fund to get an expert. Money that people had sent into us. I feel that we had to do most of the investigative work ourselves.

I think, looking back at the private prosecution, we were led to believe that we would get a just outcome. We had passed the hurdle of the committal and it was clear that these boys were the ones who had murdered Stephen - we weren't being vindictive. I believe after what we saw and heard that the Magistrates' decision was the right one. Had we been able to present the same facts to the jurors the outcome would have been different.

The committal was the first time I heard the evidence. It was difficult to hear everything, it was still too shocking and disturbing. At the time of committal however we felt extremely optimistic. I had a false sense of security about the private prosecution, looking back on it, because I felt that for the first time the police were working with us not against us. I felt the officers from the second team were really committed and had laid a foundation to show their commitment and that we could actually achieve something. At the committal the boys whole attitude was extremely arrogant. They felt really strong and secure about themselves. They never once looked worried. They had a sort of "come and get me if you dare" attitude. On one occasion two of them were seen to make cut throat gestures while looking in our direction. It also shocked me to see how much people were prepared to lie for them. Gary Dobson's girlfriend's mother was called and the Magistrate actually put her in the cells for contempt because she refused to say anything. She wouldn't confirm her earlier statements to the police and she almost ended up spending Christmas there.

After the committal my feelings were of hope. I felt that we were at long last getting somewhere. We were going to achieve what had been denied to us for so long. On the first day at the Old Bailey I was extremely optimistic but from the minute the Judge opened his mouth my hopes were dashed. It was clear from the outset that he had come the intention of not letting the matter proceed any further. We'd been warned that the State was against us and it wasn't in the interest of anybody to let private prosecutions by black families succeed because it would set a precedent. It was clear that this was not a man who would allow us to present to the Court the full story and let the jury decide. He made a ruling from the outset that the jury could not hear from Dwayne, the most important witness. The Defence with the Judge's resistance set about discrediting Dwayne completely. The whole mood was set for me by the almighty fuss that the Defence made out of people around the Court wearing Stephen Lawrence ribbons. They spent some time arguing for a ruling that people around the Court couldn't wear ribbons which of course the Judge acceded to. This was the sensitivity with which the private prosecution was received and these were the issues with which Judge Curtis chose to concern himself. In my opinion, however, it was clear from the expressions of the jury that they wanted to do their job and they obviously felt cheated when the Judge instructed them to return a verdict of not guilty. When he told them that there was no other alternative they actually went out to consider and then came back in. They didn't want to do it.



When it became clear that the Judge wouldn't let us go any further, I collapsed at Court. I just couldn't cope with anymore and I had to be carried out. I wasn't even there for the last day. I didn't want to hear one more word the man said. I just couldn't face it. I could not believe it. From the first day in Court I could sense that things were going wrong from the time the Judge sat down. It was as though we were just pawns, being played, we had no say. We had no part of it, we had nothing to do with what was being directed. We were just being swept along. It was like watching a play where someone is behind the screen being a puppet and someone pulling the strings. You think you are in charge yet you are not. You are led to believe that you have a say. I think after the committal I thought we were getting somewhere and we are going to prove that this is what the CPS should have done and achieve what they should. After the collapse at the Old Bailey I realised there was no way that the State would have allowed us to have done that, because that would have been a slap in the face for the Government and the Crown Prosecution Service. What was coming across for me at the time was - "Who do we think we are - some black family telling them that their justice system stinks."

Looking back I believe I was naive to hope that we would have got somewhere with the prosecution.

Then there was the inquest in February 1997. Again we heard more evidence we had not heard before. I stayed in Court and heard a lot more than I did at the committal. A lot more was brought to my attention than before. I was given a greater sense of what went on with the police and the information that was coming from them at the inquest. That was the first time I found out how Stephen really died. The coroner said he bled to death. He would have bled at the scene heavily and running made it worse. It was the first time that I knew there was an issue about First Aid and realised that nobody had put Stephen in the recovery position. No First Aid was given by any police officers present at the scene.

I realise that they did not touch him. My only thought was it must be because he was black. When someone is injured you expect the police to investigate where the injuries are. I did say at the inquest that they probably could not have saved his life. I am not saying that if they had done the first aid he would have lived. What I am saying is that they did not even look. They did not see his wounds, they had no idea how seriously injured he was - they knew nothing. I thought that the police had put Stephen in the recovery position but they did not even touch him. The off-duty policeman I understand used a blanket from his car to cover him. Police officers are aware of First Aid - it is basic training as they are sometimes the first on the scene of an accident.

When DCI John Carnt said there were no problems with the first investigation I was shocked. I felt it must be some sort of conspiracy happening. After so many years of listening to rumours that the first officers messed up. The fact that he stood there and blatantly lied, saying as far as he was concerned the investigation was fine and the only drawback was the relationship with the family. I could not believe it - then again he is a policeman. The discussions with and investigations of the second team showed that the first team missed so many things that they could have picked up on. They knew, we knew and now the Kent Report shows it. That is when I put in the complaint. Before that everything was kept closed and guarded and if they could have kept it that way they would have continued to do so. It's taken me 4 years to read in the PCA report that a man walked into the police station to try to give information within 24 hours of the murder and it's taken me 5 years to discover that James Grant's real name was known to senior investigating officers all along.

The Coroner was extremely supportive to us as bereaved parents from the start. It also came across that the jury were affected by what they were hearing. This of course was the first time that the story had been heard in open court. They wanted to make a statement of support to us but obviously they weren't allowed to. It was empowering however to see that members of the public hearing the evidence coming out for the first time were as shocked as we were. I was also extremely touched by the support of the Coroner. I collapsed at Court towards the end and he looked after me and took me

into his room and gave me a cup of tea. Even in the public hearings he dealt with the whole procedure in an extremely sensitive way I felt. On the last day after John Carnt had given his evidence the day before Ian Johnson came down, I obviously didn't appreciate his presence at that stage. I was still feeling very let down and I felt that he'd just come to support his officers and pacify me. I was actually quite offended.

I believe the Kent (Police Complaints Authority) Report "has not got to the bottom of what went on. It's scratched the surface." At the beginning it was saying that the police officers were not racist in their attitude and behaviour towards the case, but clearly by the end of it their actions show there has to be some reason. If it was not racism what was it? Incompetence? Corruption? That only goes some way to explain. We are told that these officers have years of experience at investigating murder so this was not new to them. What went wrong? Something did. Their attitude tells me it was racism. Police have a pre-conceived idea of what black people are like, and their behaviour demonstrates this yet again. According to my understanding the only regular dealings police have with black families is when they are criminals. So, coming across a black family who have no criminal background is new to them - an alien concept. It was like you have to be a criminal if you are black. When the PCA asked the question to all officers "Are you racist?" did you really expect them to say yes? One white person cannot ask another white person if they are racist. How would they know? There is overt racism when people are blatantly racist in your face and then the other covert racism, and how do you prove it?

Racism is institutionalised. From what I have read in the PCA report it's like "How dare you think I am racist." Well I say - how dare I think you are not, because nothing in your actions has proven to me that you are not, and I see no other explanation for your attitude and behaviour.

I believe because the police spent so much time investigating my family and Stephen they came to the conclusion that we were not criminals and so they had no case. They were trying to prove that Stephen was involved in something and was not attacked just for being black. They spent their time asking people in our house who they were. There was a candlelit vigil - I was only there for half an hour and it was recorded. I am sure it was the police who recorded it and there was a young man there who knew of Stephen - his connection was that his parents were friends of my sister so he would have seen Stephen, but not visited our house or vice versa. He would meet Stephen occasionally. This black young man was very tall so he stood out from the crowd. He was tracked down because he was shouting "racist murderers". He was visited by the police to find out his relationship with Stephen and the family. If the police could do that by picking someone out of a crowd and tracing them to their address - they could have found Stephen's killers.

What I want from this Inquiry is to show the police's behaviour and their inaction. Through their negligence these people have been allowed to walk free, and through the legal system three of the boys can never be brought to justice. I believe the police had a hand in the whole thing.

If I could, I would change every single police officer in the country and get a black person in charge of investigations. I would like to get someone who is truly black and not token black. There is a difference. Somebody who knows and can relate to the issues. I do not expect an officer who is black to brush everything aside and not act in the proper way but to uphold law and order for everyone. I am asking for someone who is impartial and will treat people as individuals and equals.

With hindsight you need groups like ARA to point out issues to you because someone like myself was not aware that this sort of thing was happening on a daily basis. We did not continue with their support because we felt they had an agenda. They said they were there for the family but they were there to highlight ARA and they weren't taking the family's feelings into consideration. They saw this as something to push themselves forward and to make themselves better known.

One thing I resent very strongly is the constant allegation that our solicitor somehow stop them doing their job. How could he?

Weedon says that there were more solicitors for witnesses in this case than there were for defendants. It is not surprising; the police upset Dwayne, they upset us, they upset Jo Shepherd, they upset us all. We certainly felt that we needed a solicitor to support us.

They say they were unfamiliar with the solicitor representing a family. They are supposed to deal with solicitors on a daily basis, I don't understand the hostility. It was obviously necessary for us to have a solicitor, to act as a buffer between us and the people who were dealing with us so insensitively in our time of grief.

I believe it was right to have a solicitor representing us. In hindsight it was a good thing that we did it when we did. People need that, especially if you have never had dealings with the police before. You do not always understand how the law works. It was a great help because we had no idea. We needed some background knowledge on the sort of police procedure. We needed to know how the police investigation worked. We were not getting any of this information from the family liaison officers. No black person can ever trust the police. This idea is not pre-conceived. Its based on experience and people I know who have had bad experiences with the police.

They don't seem to understand, we are not accustomed to visiting police stations, we are not accustomed to dealing with the police and we have no reason to trust them. They say that we were their "first and prime consideration" but, for example, they wouldn't set out minds at ease by letting Imran Khan come to the Incident Room with us and then they complained that they invited us to the Incident Room and we declined. We didn't want to go into a police station on our own.

At the meetings I always felt that Philpott wanted to be helpful, it seemed as if he wanted to give us more information but that Illsley was preventing him. It was just a feeling but at the meetings he would often look over to Illsley before he answered and then sometimes stop saying something. Illsley believed that we were primed beforehand that we were told what sort of questions to ask and how to ask them. There was one incident that has stuck out in my mind when I was asking about the boys in prison. I was asking why couldn't they not put a bug in with them in the room to listen to what was being said, because if they would not talk to the police they would talk to individuals, and Illsley said "We do not do things like this - no way" and I could remember that he was very angry because he assumed I was told to ask that question. There were many incidents like this where they patronised me - as if I cannot think for myself. It was a constant argument with him. He would never give a straight answer to my questions. I was getting frustrated because I was asking simple questions and if they had ever said, "This is what's happening, we have arrested so and so, it was as a result of the names you gave us, this where we are at and we are moving from here to there." I would have been satisfied. That was all I was asking for. What I'd like to know is what were the police looking for? What else did they want before they could effect an arrest? The information that I was getting, instead of passing it on to the police I should have gone and made a citizen's arrest myself. Then there would have been no need to waste time and taxpayer's money now on an Inquiry because the guilty would be behind bars. My hope now is that people will come forward to the Inquiry and give evidence. When I hear now that there wasn't in fact a wall of silence as we were told by the police, I realise how brave the people of Eltham actually were. It seems that people who were themselves at risk in the early days had made themselves vulnerable by coming forward and giving information were not rewarded by the boys being captured. I am now not surprised that no more witnesses would come forward at that time. After all, the boys were still on the street. Witness K's father actually complained about Davidson "harassing" his son. This is what was happening. You raise people's profile in the community and you



still leave the boys on the street. This is exactly what happened with Joey Shepherd. He really wanted to help but they shouted his name out at the identity parade, made him public property and left him vulnerable. Basically the people who did go and give information to the police at the beginning of this Inquiry were rewarded by the police's inaction. In practice we all make mistakes but we pick ourselves up and sort things out and try harder. In this case there's been nothing but mistakes. Every officer who has come in has made matters worse. When you list the catalogue of errors you have to ask yourselves whether there possibly can be so many mistakes or whether they must be deliberate acts. By keeping us occupied they kept the black community quiet, it gave us a false sense of security and it made black people feel that justice could be achieved. We now know after the Kent Inquiry just how much had gone wrong and how much should have been done that wasn't and we are discovering more everyday.

I would like Stephen Lawrence to be remembered as a young man who had a future. He was well loved and had he been given the chance to survive, maybe he would have been the one to bridge the gap between black and white because he didn't distinguish between black and white. He saw people as people.

## **Statement of Neville Lawrence**

**7 March 1998**

My name is Neville Lawrence. I am the father of Stephen Lawrence.

I was born on 13 March 1942 in Kingston, Jamaica and I came to England in August 1960 at the age of 18.

Most of my relatives are still in Jamaica. The relatives I have in this country are one sister and several cousins. My mother's name was Hilda Truwe, my father's name was Adrian Lawrence. We gave Stephen my father's middle name.

I have a sister, Jean Lawrence and one brother, Norman Rose, who is now living in Atlanta. I am the eldest of the three children and am the one who would do everything regarding the looking after my mother. My brother and sister left everything to me to deal with.

My mother used to run a restaurant inside the Daily Gleaner, in the early days. My father was a leather turner. He worked in a factory down in Kingston, a place called Three Miles for quite a long time. My mother died in 1989 after losing one of her legs because she had diabetes. My father is still alive and living in Kingston, Jamaica.

When I came to the UK I stayed with my aunt and uncle in law, who emigrated to England in the early 50's. My aunt did not have any children and I was more or less looked upon as her son. My sister came over before me. My aunt was instrumental in raising me and my sister. It is something, that is widely done in Jamaica where the old families are responsible for bringing up a child.



WIT 0003 0200

When I first came here I lived in Kentish Town which at the time was notorious for Teddy boys and things like that. I was available to work as an upholsterer because I had left school and done my apprenticeship and was therefore qualified. Unfortunately I was not able to get a job. I believe that this was because of racism. The racism that we experienced then was not as bad as that we now experience. In those days it was mostly verbal, not physical. The violence is much worse nowadays.

London was not what I expected it to be. From what I read and heard it was the mother country and the streets were paved with gold. It was completely different to what I expected. It was not as advanced as I thought it would be. Maybe some people won't agree with me but it was not as advanced as Jamaica.

In the early days we did not have much contact with the white population. Because there were not a lot of black people around we tended to stick to ourselves. We entertained ourselves and went to each others house for dinner. Generally the only contact we had with the white population was at work

I experienced racism when I first arrived here but I did not recognise it as such at the time. People used to make jokes about us in a way that you did not realise it was actually being racist. They used to call us "coons" and the like but then you thought it was just like a nickname.

There is one incident in particular that sticks out in my mind. Just after I came here, I went to the job centre although I was a fully qualified upholsterer they classed me as an improver. The morning when I was supposed to start work the people who

had offered this job then realised that I was black and then all of a sudden the job disappeared. I was aware of racism back then. But, I thought to myself that this was not my country so I had to put up with certain things.

Most of my friends I met in England just after I arrived. Thirty years on we are still friends and they are just like family. My best friend is a man called Winston Shaw who was also my best man. He moved to the United States in mid seventies. Most of the time I have lived in London. I have friends who live in Birmingham, Manchester and places like that.

Because I could not get a job as an upholsterer I went to work for the Borough Council in a factory. While I was there I thought I should not be doing this kind of job so I started to go to Woodberry Down School in Manor House, North London during the evenings. I studied tool-making. We had to do a three year City & Guilds course in order to go on and do the actual job which I passed. When it came to getting a job, all the other white students got places in factories but I did not. I had wasted three years studying. I then went into furniture making. I think I stayed there for about a year and then moved on to work with a friend who had a suede and leather factory. I spent nine years tailoring at the factory.

When the work got scarce we started looking for work in the newspaper. There were lots of jobs giving work out to people who sewed at home so I used to go and pick up the work from the factory and sew it at Aspinal Road, where I lived before I got married. I then got to know Doreen's mother who was also a machinist but she only did dresses and things. While I was looking for a job for myself I used to look for work for her as well and I used to collect her work and take it to her. By meeting Doreen's mother I eventually met Doreen.

WIT 0003 0202

I married Doreen on 4th November 1972 in Lewisham Registry Office. Just after we got married the employment situation changed. At that time the work was scarce so I started to do painting and decorating which I had learnt in Jamaica. I started to work with two plasterers. I got a job at a plastering firm and decided that I should learn to plaster. I have been doing plastering and decorating for the last twenty years.

When we first got married we lived in Aspinall Road, Brockley for about a year. We later moved to Lindus Road. We joined a company with about fifteen people. Each person would give £1,000.00 towards setting up the company. We purchased a house in Nunhead with a shop underneath and a flat above. We proceeded to do the place up and rented out the bottom which was an off-licence.

Eventually we bought our second house in Whitworth Road, Plumstead where we lived for a couple of years. Stephen was born on September 13<sup>th</sup> 1974 at Greenwich District Hospital. I was present for the birth. It was frightening I did not think I could manage to stay there while this was happening but I'm pleased I did.

There were no problems with Stephen as a child. He was a very good baby in the sense that he did not really sleep through the day. I think he woke up once at night. Stephen went to the nursery at Woolwich Common and from there he went to the primary school on Whitworth Road. He went to Blackheath Blue Coats Secondary School where he did his GCSE exams. On obtaining his GCSE's Stephen went on to do A levels at the sixth form college.

Stephen was very talented at school. I remember we went to see the Head of his House before he went to school and there were so many good reports about him. We

used to go to all his open evenings to make sure that he did not fall behind. His favourite subject was art. One of the things we discovered was that he wanted to be an architect so he was very good at drawing.

Stephen also wanted to run. I used to take him to a group near Schofields Park. He joined a club and used to go twice a week. We used to go and take him to meetings all over the country. When the London Marathon started, there was a mini marathon which Stephen took part in and did very well. I think he came 16<sup>th</sup> out of several hundred.

Stephen did work experience with Arthur Timothy who is a well known black architect. We soon realise how gifted Stephen was because at the end of two weeks Arthur Timothy told us that Stephen was so good at his work and so punctual that he had been allowed to stay at his office in charge. Normally work experience students do not get paid and yet Arthur Timothy paid Stephen for the two weeks that he was there and asked him to return to work for him once he had finished his training.

We have two other children, Stuart and Georgina. Stuart is two years younger than Stephen and Georgina is about five years younger. Stuart was also born at Greenwich District Hospital. Again I was present.

When Georgina was born we were living at Llanover Road in Woolwich. Georgina was also born at Greenwich District Hospital. I was not present for her birth because Georgina was not born on the day we expected. Doreen had gone for a check up and then something happened and they had to rush her into emergency. I received the news work whilst I was still at work. By the time I got to the hospital,



WIT 0003 0204

Doreen had already given birth to Georgina.

Stephen got on with Georgina and Stuart in the way I got on with my sister and brother. He was the eldest one and he saw himself as somebody who had to look after them. Stuart was sickly at the time, he had eczema and asthma and a lot of time was spent going backwards and forwards to the hospital. There were occasions when Stuart was so bad he had to stay in the hospital for about three or four days at a time. Stephen would always be there with us to make sure that Stuart was alright. He was really concerned about both the kids.

Stephen has never been in trouble. We brought our children up to respect the law.. As far as I know Stephen had never even spoken to a policeman.

One of Stephen's best friends was Elvin Odoru. He and Stephen used to go everywhere together. When I did not see Stephen, as Elvin's stepfather once told me when he came to our house, Stephen would be at his house. There were other friends, as he was very popular, but the one I saw most of all was Elvin. Stephen had friends of all races. We brought Stephen up in the belief that you did not see colour as a problem. I do not see colour as a problem because that is the way we are brought up in Jamaica.

Another of Stephen's friends' was Duwayne. Doreen and I met Duwayne at a christening party just before Stephen started at Blackheath Blue Coats. In the early days I used to work 14 hours a day so I used to leave at 6.00 am and never got back until 9.00 pm/10.00 pm so if Duwayne used to come to the house I never saw him.

My mother was a Seventh Day Adventist. I used to go to a Catholic School so from



an early stage religion has been part of my life. The children attended Trinity Church in Woolwich from an early age. Stephen was christened there. He was also blessed at a Seventh Day Adventist Church. We would go to church every Sunday.

Stephen was in the cubs and later the scouts. He was involved in numerous activities. They would regularly put on shows in the evening and take part in other charitable events.

Stephen has never said anything to me about having problems concerning race so as far as I know he didn't have any.

In the early 1990's there were several murders of black people in our area. Although I heard about them I did not know the details. It had never occurred to me that the area was unsafe for black people to live in. I had not thought that racism was so bad in the area.

The week of Thursday April 22nd 1993 Stephen was at home because his mother had gone away on a field trip to Birmingham as she was studying to be a teacher. I was unemployed at the time so I was at home. I lost my job around 1989 when the building trade started to have problems. I was taking evening classes in glass staining and during the daytime I was home and was in charge of looking after the children on those occasions that Doreen was away. I made dinner and made sure that the children went to school on time, came back on time and didn't go to bed late.

On the morning of Thursday April 22 1993 I sent Georgina and Stuart to school. Stephen normally left a bit later. He came downstairs and had some tea. He went

WIT 0003 0206

back to get his stuff, came into our bedroom overlooking the road and said "Seeya later". I said to him "Don't go anywhere because your mum's coming home later". He asked me if I was okay and I said yes. He went down and returned upstairs and said "Are you sure you're alright dad?" and I said "Yes". Because I was not working, I was not feeling all that good about myself.

I watched Stephen go down the road with his rucksack over his back. That is the last time I saw him alive. I made dinner in the afternoon for all of us. Stuart and I were waiting thinking that Stephen was coming home at about 3.30 pm/4.00 pm. At 4.30 pm when he did not turn up we had dinner and I put his in the oven with his mother's. We waited for him thinking he was going to come. I did not worry though because I assumed he was at Elvin's house.

At about 9.30 pm I went to collect Doreen from Woolwich because the coach was dropping her off there. She had her dinner and sat down to watch the news with us. Stephen had still not returned. Just after 10.30 pm there was a ring at the doorbell I thought it was Stephen. I went downstairs and opened the door. It was Joey Shepherd, his father and brother. Joey told me that he had seen Stephen being attacked down the road at a bus stop by the Welcome Inn pub by about six white youths. When he said that Stephen had been attacked Doreen came downstairs. Joey's father said that we should ring the police and find out what was happening. Doreen called the police who told her that they knew nothing about the incident.

We decided to go down to the spot that Joey said he had seen Stephen. We got into the car and I drove. We could not see anything happening when we got there. We drove down as far as the Welcome Inn pub just beyond the bus stop to the next turning on the left and we looked straight down the road. We could see straight

WIT 0003 0207

down the road to the roundabout at Wellhall Road because it is a wide long straight road. We couldn't see any flashing lights. We were looking to see if there were police or ambulance vehicles about. We saw no lights. We saw no indication that anything was happening there so we decided to go to the hospital just to make sure. I still did not believe it had anything to do with Stephen.

We drove to the Brook Hospital which was a few minutes away. When we got there we did not see any activity that indicated that something bad had happened. We went to the Accident and Emergency Department where there was a police car parked outside. There was a policeman sitting outside in the car with the door open and another officer standing at the hospital entrance. We walked towards the reception area to see if we could see Stephen. We did not see him sitting anywhere. We looked to the waiting area and there was no Stephen so we started to look in the cubicles but he was not there either. We turned round to go back out and on the way I saw Duwayne on his own on the right hand side standing against a wall. At this point I realised that Stephen was there. I went up to Duwayne and was about to say "What happened to Stephen?".

Before I could say anything to him a man dressed in a green overall came up to Duwayne and asked him something like "What did he hit him with?". Before we could talk to Duwayne the nurse and doctor came over and we started to talk to them. We asked if Stephen was there they said yes. We then asked if we could see him but they said 'no'. We asked why and were told that he was being worked on. I do not recall if it was the doctor or nurse that spoke to us but they were both women.

We were told to go and wait in a nearby room. Doreen and I sat down but Dwayne

WIT 0003 0208

did not. He just stood next to the door. You could see that he was distressed. We thought maybe Stephen had been stabbed in his arm or he had cut his hand or something. I was just praying that he was not dead. I thought it was just a fight in which he got cut badly but at no time did I think he was dead.

I don't remember if we talked to each other; we just sat there. All sorts of thoughts were going through my mind. I don't remember how long we were sitting there but it could have been about half an hour. Both the doctor and the nurse came in together. As I watched them coming towards us it reminded me of the hospital TV programmes you watch. As they were walking I was thinking "Are they coming to tell me that Stephen is dead". That is what was running through my mind because it was taking so long for them to come back. I started to think all kinds of things.

They came in the door. I do not remember if I stood up. I don't even remember the exact words they used but I do remember they said that Stephen was dead and we could phone our relatives or something like that.

It still did not hit me. When they said Stephen was dead Duwayne went wild. I just sat there. I was numb. Duwayne was acting as though he wanted to climb the walls. I could not take it in.

We were told we could phone our relatives so Doreen phoned her sister. I went and rang my cousin Sonia in Marylebone. I told her that we were at the hospital and there had been an accident or something and that Stephen was dead. She went crazy on the phone and said she was coming down. Some time later Doreen's sister Cheryl and her husband came. We were asked to give the hospital staff some time to clean Stephen up before we could see him.



I cannot remember if Cheryl went in to see Stephen with us but I am sure she did not go in on her own. We may have already been in there, just me and Doreen alone at first. We went into a separate room not far from where we had been sitting to see Stephen. He was lying there as if he was sleeping. I cannot remember if he was covered.

I was just looking and thinking that he was not really dead and that he was lying there asleep. I know that I left the hospital that night and drove home but I cannot remember driving home.

Nobody actually told us what had happened to Stephen. Nobody. None of the policemen at the hospital spoke to us. When we got through that door, nobody stopped us to ask us who we were, if we were the parents of Stephen or what. No policeman stopped and said anything to us. I am sure I would have remembered if they did. We were at the hospital for just over an hour. Stuart and Georgina were at home asleep. I started to worry about them being there on their own because of what had just happened to Stephen so we did not stay very long.

I do not remember if Duwayne was there when we saw Stephen and I do not know if he saw Stephen. I did not speak to Duwayne. I drove back home. I can remember Cheryl, Michael and Millie being at the hospital. I do not remember anybody else being there. Doreen went to bed but I did not. Georgina and Stuart were still sleeping.

I do not remember telling Stuart and Georgina. I do not know who told them. The first person I rang the next morning was Elvin. There is no way would I have

WIT 0003 0210

thought that Dwayne would have been with Stephen. I would have thought that it was Elvin. It then became clear to me later on that Elvin had to go somewhere that evening and that is why he was not with Stephen. Sometimes when I used to pick up Georgina from school it would be Stephen and Elvin I would see going off for the evening. If Elvin had been available that night Stephen would have been with him.

The next day is very cloudy. We still did not know how Stephen had been killed. All we knew was that he had been attacked as we had been informed by Joey Shepherd. After I had rung Elvyn I spoke to a councillor in Stoke Newington. I then spoke to Clara and asked her to phone Doreen's school friends and let them know what had happened. Clara arrived at the house and took charge of the day to day running of the house.

I was expecting to see something about Stephen's murder in the papers on Friday morning. When I looked in the papers there was nothing so I rang up a reporter friend whom I had done some work for earlier on and told him what had happened. I asked him questions about notices going up in a press room or somewhere where journalists go to look for a story. I asked him if he had seen anything about a young black boy being killed in Eltham the night before and he said 'no'. He said he had stopped writing but was still working for the paper and that he would come down and do my story which he did. The next reporter was a person from The Voice. My cousin rang The Voice and told them what was happening. The reporter came down and did an interview. The first news report about Stephen's death came out in the Independent on the Saturday morning.

At the Press Conference the police said that they were going to appeal for witnesses to come forward. They still had not told us what had happened to Stephen. I met with the person who was in charge of the investigation on the evening of the Press Conference, Mr Crampton. He said to me that he would not be on the case for very long because he was going to do another case on the Monday and that somebody else was going to take over from him. I was told to appeal for anybody who had seen or heard anything to come forward and give evidence so that they could catch the killers.

We were introduced to the two liaison officers DS Bevan and DC Holden on the Friday before the Press Conference. They informed me that they would be keeping us up to date about what was happening on a day to day basis. I had met PC Fisher earlier that day. I understood their role to be to let us know what was happening with the case everyday, what kind of leads they had or what was happening generally but without giving anything away. To let us know how many people they had questioned although not anything specific that would jeopardise the case. They said they would keep us informed us by coming round or telephoning us. They asked us if we wanted counselling but we said 'no' because we had people from the church, like the Minister of the Church, so we were not on our own.

There were Social Services people around and anti- racist groups were there to support us, the Anti Racist Alliance (ARA), another guy ,Karl Booth, and later on people from the Panther UK also came. I did not see them on the Friday but they came back on the Saturday after having done a collection. As far as I know the various groups at our house were there because news had spread about the incident and because there was another incident in our area before where a black boy had been murdered. I was in no position to ask these people to leave because if what I

**WIT 0003 0212**

was hearing was true, we needed people to help us handle the situation. They said they would do various things for us and because of the state we were in we did not know what to do.

I was clear by Friday that Stephen was murdered because he was black. When we were at the Press Conference people were saying that it was a racist murder and one of the people from the TV station made a comment that Stephen had been in the wrong place at the wrong time. I do not know where the information came from. The media coverage gradually lessened. I was angry because I thought that for anyone to see that and to get sense of it, it had to run the whole length so I started to think that I should talk to one of my friends in the media who was a Director for a news company.

On the Saturday I do not recall speaking to a lawyer. I am told that I went to church that day but I do not recall. I remember meeting Imran Khan on the Sunday. Various people that were telling us we had to make a decision as to how to deal with the situation. Mark Wadsworth and Palma Black who were from ARA, and others were telling us that we needed a bodyguard in case our house was attacked and to make sure that the other two children were not attacked when they were going to school.

What these people were saying was making me even more frightened because I was not expecting anything like this. I was very worried. I accepted the invitation of support because I felt we needed the support. I could see that the police weren't being supportive in any real sense. When the liaison officers arrived that Sunday they started questioning us about the amount of people in the house and the purpose of them being there. Holden asked me why all these people were there so I told her



that it was my house and I was entitled to invite anyone I wanted. She told Clara that I was mad.

Holden made a remark about woolen gloves and a hat being found. I do not remember if she said they found them in Stephen's bag but it was clear that she was implying that Stephen was a cat burglar. I said that lots of people carry woolen gloves and a hat. I was very upset that she implying that Stephen was a criminal.

I lost sense of the days that followed on from the Sunday. I just kind of got up in the mornings not knowing what day it was. As the days went by I was just getting more worried seeing that nobody was being arrested. The liaison officers would come regularly. I don't remember if it was every day that they came. I did not look forward to their visits because as far as I was concerned they were not telling me anything. I remember at some stage they mentioned something about an identification parade. I think we had some kind of argument about going to see Stephen's body at Greenwich mortuary. The liaison officers were saying that we could not see Stephen's body. Rickie Morse, a counsellor was at our house and was instrumental in setting up the viewing of seeing Stephen on the Saturday 24th April 1993.

As far as I can remember it was Doreen, myself, Cheryl and possibly Michael who went to see Stephen at the mortuary. The thing that sticks in my mind was that they were saying that only Doreen and myself were allowed behind the screen at the mortuary because it was a glass screen and that the rest of the family would have to stay outside the screen and look through the glass. We were all very distressed and crying. I turned round and saw PC Fisher standing right behind me. I told him that this was a private matter and that he should not be there and should be standing

WIT 0003 0214

so close and that we wanted some privacy. After that they let us inside to where Stephen was. I cannot remember if he was fully covered to the neck or but they did show us where the wounds were, the one that was coming down from the top of his collar bone to just below his chin, I think they described that the knife had gone in straight through his lungs and it had gone through his muscle and through to the other side and touched his heart.

My feelings at that point were that I was looking at my son lying there and thinking what butchers could have done something like this to a human being. I could not believe what I was seeing. I was hoping that the police would catch Stephen's murderers quickly because one of the mortuary attendants said that they might not release Stephen's body for burial until somebody had been caught. I became concerned about Stephen lying in this place because I was told they had to freeze him and for them to do a post mortem they had to take him out and unfreeze him and then put him back. I had been told that any persons arrested for Stephen's murder would have the right to conduct their own examination of Stephen's body. I was thinking that if there were five or six people involved in this murder they would have to take him out five or six different times and I was not looking forward to that at all.

At some point during the week following the murder, a woman came to our house with information. I was upstairs at the time and could not therefore see the woman. Someone in the house answered the door and spoke to her. She said that there had been people in her house on the night of the murder who had washed blood off themselves. She gave the names of the Acourts', Norris and Knight. We then passed these details on to Mr Khan because we felt it was better for him to with with the police. We thought as Mr Khan was the solicitor representing us, he should be the

one to contact the police.

After that we were given a mobile number of Linda Holden in case we needed to contact her if we felt threatened or had information. There was one occasion, late at night, where I was walking around the house looking out of the front and back windows. We didn't have a fence or gate. I could not see everything in the road. When Millie left our house that night she noticed that there were two boys coming towards her so she rushed to her car. She looked towards our house and saw a van with another two boys standing behind it. She went to the local police station to tell them what she had seen. She was told by the officer on the desk that they knew nothing about our family. When she got home Millie rang us to let us know what had happened. She said we should call the liaison officers and let them know. It was around midnight. We then rang Linda Holden on her mobile phone. She said she would ring the station and tell them to send someone. I recall standing by the window for a while but no police officer arrived. I rang the station and they said they did not know anything about this incident.

Later on a police officer arrived. I spoke to him. He said he would drive around and look for the boys. He also said he would be keeping an eye out and would make more frequent visits.

There were other incidents where our car tyres were slashed. On another occasion someone stabbed a screw driver in to our car tyre. That happened on a day we were doing a piece for the BBC. They BBC filmed this. Somebody called the police and as I recall two officers came. I said that it was clear we were being targeted but they said this was not so and that it was probably just a nail or something that we had driven over.

WIT 0003 0216

This latest incident made us feel even more threatened. We wanted to move away from the area as we were very concerned about our children's safety. It was clear that not only were police not going to protect us but they didn't believe that we were any danger. We approached the Council to see if they would re-house us, even temporarily but they said that they could not since we were not council tenants. Dorothy Thomas from the Housing section came to see us about alternative accommodation. Palma Black and her team from ARA were at our place more or less everyday from early in the morning till late at night. She treated our house as though it was her office.

Someone suggested that we might receive obscene phone calls so Clara and other family members screened our calls. Our post was vetted by our neighbours who were concerned for us. ARA were also taking calls. They were also meant to keep records of all the calls, I do not know if they did or not. It was because of this that some people, like the workers at GACARA may not have been able to contact us.

At no stage were we advised by anyone not to trust the police. It was clear to me from the outset that the police had no real interest in catching Stephen's murderers and for this reason we did not have much confidence in them. In other murder cases you often see the police stopping traffic and asking drivers if they have seen anything. Usually just after a murder there are lots of police vehicles at the scene and lots of activity. We saw none when we first went to look for Stephen.

I remember there was a march organised by GACARA of local schoolchildren to the spot where Stephen was murdered. Nobody approached us before doing that, it was just done. Letters were sent to organisations by Mr Khan because they were



speaking to the press without contacting us first and we did not want the situation to get out of hand. The letter said that no statements should be made nor should anything be done unless they have spoken to us. This was suggested by myself and Doreen and had nothing to do with the ARA. I wanted to meet with the organisations who were supporting us so we could talk to them and discuss how things could best proceed.

We began to experience difficulties in getting contact with Holden and Bevan. Both their mobile phones always seemed to be turned off. This coupled with the comment about Stephens hat and gloves caused me to feel that they were not sympathetic. The way they spoke to us made us feel as though they regarded us as a nuisance. I felt as though they resented us wanting to know what was happening with the investigation. I decided that I no longer wanted either Holden or Bevan to come to our house. I rang up CSU Philpot and told him not to send them to my house because they were not doing what they were supposed to do. A suggestion was made that we should then come to the station at Plumstead on a weekly basis and they would give us any information or tell us what was happening there. We were told that we could not come if we were going to bring Mr Khan. I then said if Mr Khan was not coming then neither were we. We had no previous experience of dealing with the police. I think that they did not want someone to attend with us who would know whether or not they were really investigating Stephen's murder properly. I think that they wanted to try and pull the wool over our eyes. In the end even with a solicitor they still failed to properly investigate our sons murder.

Eventually it was agreed that we could take Mr Khan and any family member that wanted to come to the police station once a week. Karl from the ARA came to the meeting at one stage but not at our invitation.

WIT 0003 0218

The meetings with Philpot were not very constructive because the questions we were putting to them were not being answered. I kept asking about forensics. Millie had told us that when she had driven to the area where Stephen had been murdered was not cordoned off. One of the investigating officers attempted to reassure me that they were looking at the forensic angle. I kept asking about this every time we met and always given the same answer. The only time I was told that there was no forensic evidence was a week before the people who were arrested were to go to court. I believe that if the police had properly cordoned off the area they would have found some forensic evidence.

Whenever we had a meeting with the police I was anxious to know what progress they had made and if we had a good chance of winning this case. They hardly ever told us anything. On one occasion Doreen had written the names of Stephen's murderers on a piece of paper because we had been given information that they were responsible. She wrote the names down and gave them to a senior officer. He then proceeded to fold this paper up in his hand like a ball as if he were going to throw it away. All of the suggestions that we made about trying to get these people quickly were treated as if we were trying to interfere. I asked them that after Stephen's body was released to me and my family to bury him were they allowed to go back and dig it up if they felt like it. They said 'yes'.

We were beginning to feel that the killers of my sons had more rights than we had. We heard that killers were being protected and being moved and all these kind of things and that was worrying. At one stage I heard a rumour that the police had moved the families of the boys responsible for Stephen's murder. We were thinking that those families were not under any kind of threat from us yet they were being

protected and moved whilst we were in a house where we felt threatened and not moved to anywhere.

The first time that we became aware that someone had been arrested for the murder was when we heard it on the TV or radio. We did not hear it from the police. We heard it from the media and it was a surprise. We thought, that because we were going to the police station, we would have been the first to hear and then maybe after you would have seen it on the news.

We were approached by a member of one of the organisations to see if we would be interested in meeting President Mandela while he was in the UK. We said yes but never thought we would ever meet anybody like him because seeing that he had nothing to do with the government in this country we did not think he would be interested in meeting us. This was something to do with Britain and not South Africa. When it was finalised that we were going to meet this man we were pleased because at least somebody was going to listen to what we had to say. I was surprised to see that he was really interested and wanted to spend twenty minutes with us listening to our grievances about the way in which we were being treated by the police. The government did not make a statement about the death of our son, we did not get a message from the Queen or anything like that. President Mandela made a statement about the lives of black people in South Africa being cheap. The media and everyone was there the morning that we met him and straight after that, the following morning all of a sudden these guys were arrested.

That suggested to me that the government of this country did not care about me and my family unless the media was present or our outcry came from certain sections of the community or someone as powerful as Mandela. That was a bad thing. It

**WIT 0003 0220**

showed me that all along the police knew who the people were but were not prepared to take any action unless somebody of some kind of substance said something in public that would be noticed by the world. That was our feelings. This meeting took place with Mandela in Central London in a hotel. I will always remember it. Not long before Mandela was released I had listened to a friend of his, a lawyer or someone who explained what kind of person he was and seeing that this man was inside prison for twenty odd years, I just wanted to see what kind of a person he was, if there was any kind of bitterness after being locked up for twenty odd years. All that I heard and all that this woman described about this man was true because he sat there and he listened to us talk and didn't interrupt us at any stage. He let us explain to him our feelings of losing our son and he sympathised in such a way that I felt really good after leaving.

I don't remember if our weekly meetings with the police continued after people had been arrested and charged. I felt that we would get to the bottom of this quickly after the arrest. I was hoping that the first two people who were arrested would then talk and name the other three, four or five or how many there were and then they would be arrested. But, not long after they were arrested, they were released.

I remember the relief we felt when the first two were arrested. When the second post mortem took place I said to myself that we might get Stephen's body so then we could bury him. A few weeks later they said to us we could take his body but then said no so we had to get in touch with Sir Montague Levine, the coroner, and explain to him what was happening. I don't remember if a third person was arrested but a third post mortem was carried out and then Sir Montague Levine said to release the body to the family, which they did.



We had fears about burying Stephen here because of the situation surrounding his death and also the fact that it was explained to us that they were going to be able to go and dig his body after he was buried. I did not fancy the idea of my son's body being dug up after he was buried. I remember watching films where after a long period of time when somebody was dead and buried they would go and dig them up. I did not wish that to happen to my son so the family sat down just before we knew we were going to have his body and came to the conclusion that the best thing to do was to take him home to Jamaica. We had a memorial service in June 1993 and after that, towards the end of the month we flew out to Jamaica with the body. We buried Stephen a week or so later. We wanted to bury him on 4th July 1993 so we could remember American Independence but I think we had to bury him on 3rd July 1993. He is buried on a piece of land which belongs to Doreen and her cousin. Stephen's grandmother is also buried on that piece of land so he is lying beside his grandmother in Clarendon in Jamaica.

Most of my family are still in Jamaica. When they heard what was happening they felt a bit cut off because it is nearly 5000 miles away. I think they were pleased in a way that we had brought his body over so that they could take part in at least the burial. I feel that he is home, and I can be assured that nobody is going to violate his grave.

After we were in Jamaica for a while, two or three days before we left to come back, we heard that the charges against these people had been dropped. Also, in the same week we heard that somebody else had been killed.. Joy Gardiner had been killed by the police. We were in constant touch with the UK Embassy in Jamaica. When we got to Jamaica with Stephen's body, one of the people from the Embassy came to meet the plane and to explain to us that they were not involved, that they

**WIT 0003 0222**

had no power in Jamaica but for phone calls and things relating to the UK that we needed to do we could go to the Embassy and do it from there which I used to do.

We arrived back to the news that the charges had been dropped.. I felt, at least when these people had been arrested, that we were getting somewhere. To be told that the charges had been dropped and this had been decided whilst we were out of the country was a devastating blow to us. At least they could have waited until we had come back and try to explain to us the situation before they did it.

I think we stopped going to see the police then. Since the charges had been dropped I doubted that the investigation was on full scale and I think the police were saying that they would have a few people working on the case to see if anything came up. I think we stopped seeing them on a weekly basis to try and come to terms with the fact that these people had killed our son and were going to get away with it.

The inquest was in December 1993. By this time we had discussed the case with our solicitors had decided we would consider taking out a private prosecution ourselves. Later on down the road, just before the inquest there was a witness who had come forward who the police had been informed of. On the morning of the inquest the police were asked if they had investigated this new evidence. I am almost certain that they said yes but it then turned out that they had not. Because of this the inquest was adjourned. We decided that we would make sure that if they tried to do an inquest we would stop it and we would serve papers to ensure that we could bring our own private prosecution.

By this time we had moved from Llanover Road to 15 Rayton Road, Charlton. On Stephen's birthday we held a candle lit vigil at the spot where the incident

happened and then marched from the spot to the estate and back round to the spot in a 3 ½ mile circle. After that we did a linking of hands on a Sunday linking from the spot where Stephen fell to the spot where Rohit Duggal died. That was well organised.

After we left the house where we used to live a meeting was set up with Barker. He had been chosen to look at the way the case was done and what was happening to see if he could come up with a different angle that might lead to the case being reopened. We met with him for about 4 ½ hours or so at the house and we went through the whole case, our fears and everything. We asked him if we would see his report. He said no we could not but he would let us know happened. We never heard from him again. We never met him again so we do not know what he reported.

After the inquest we were coming up to the first anniversary of Stephen's death. There was a meeting with Mr Etherington of the Crown Prosecution Service. I remember he said that there was not enough evidence to take the case any further. Following that there was a meeting with Sir Paul Condon. I do not remember what was said at the meeting.

After that Commander Nove came onto the scene. He said he would be doing things differently. We used to meet with him at Plumstead police station. It seemed to me that Commander Nove was a little bit ashamed of what had happened during the initial investigation. I felt more comfortable with Commander Nove than I had with

WIT 0003 0224

Weedon.

At the time I felt that the second investigation was conducted in a way that increased the chances of there being a prosecution. Commander Nove did not tell us exactly what he was doing but he used to tell us some things. We now know that surveillance was being used on the suspects and police were trying to see if they could get an informant to provide information. I had more confidence in Commander Nove because he treated us differently from Weedon who was hostile to us. Weedon treated us as though we were trying to get information and give it to somebody else.

It was clear to me that the police saw us as a threat. I do not know why. I have seen documentation where the police accused the family of Roland Adams of being "hostile and unco-operative". It is clear to me that the police come in with the idea that the family of black victims are violent criminals who are not to be trusted. I feel as though Bevan and Holden came in with the same attitude.

The police were saying that it was not normal for a family to be kept informed. In my view the family should be kept informed throughout. The family has just lost somebody. They want to be reassured that the job that the police are supposed to be doing is being done the right way. Given that the police failed to properly investigate my son's murder I am not surprised that they did not want us kept informed. It is clear to me that only now is the truth beginning to come out.

We had already decided that if the police and the Crown Prosecution Service were not going to do anything we would consider bringing a private prosecution. Commander Nove introduced a new Commander who was going to take over,



Commander Griffiths, and the same policeman that is still here now, John Carnt.

I felt that the Private Prosecution was the only way left open to us to put Stephen's killers behind bars. I hoped that Stephen's killers would be exposed by bringing them into the public eye, even if we failed to get a conviction against them.

When the decision was made to privately prosecute I was frightened. I knew that we were entering into something that was going to be difficult. There would be lots of people who wanted the prosecution to fail. I had confidence in everybody who was on board that they would do their best. When the summonses were issued I realised that I was going to see my son's murderers for the first time. When I saw these people I knew that it was them. I just knew it was them.

The committal proceedings were one of the most frightening periods of my life. I had been advised that if we did not get past committal then that was it. So that was the most crucial stage for me. When the committal took place it was the first time that I heard the details of what happened on the night. This was three years later. I had always thought that this incident happened at the bus stop until we saw the photographs showing that it happened in the middle of Dixon Road. At Court a description was given of how these people surrounded Stephen. The part that got to me was the way that Stephen shouted out. I could just feel a pain. I felt the pain myself and I could not stand it. I collapsed at court and was rushed to hospital.

Once the committal proceedings were over I felt relieved and relaxed because I thought we had gone through the hardest part of this thing. At the Old Bailey we were going to have twelve people who were going to decide whether or not these people were guilty. We had a good chance.

WIT 0003 0226

Before the beginning of the Old Bailey trial, I was worried because we had heard a rumour about the judge who would be in charge of this case. We had heard bad things but I was hoping that because of the publicity around the case he would not do anything to jeopardise the trial. The morning of the trial, as usual before we went in to the court, Michael and myself had a run through of certain things.

On the final day we were breaking for lunch when Michael said to me that we were in trouble. From then on we knew that we were not going to get what we wanted. After the trial collapsed I felt that I did not want to be anywhere around this part of the world. I could not believe what I had just heard and seen. I had initially been concerned that we had got an all white jury. When the jury were told to bring in a not guilty verdict I saw the look on their faces of disbelief. It seemed to me that they could not believe that the judge was actually telling them to do this. I could not believe what I was hearing. I just sat there and I froze. I would describe that day as one of the worst of my life when I saw those guys get up and walk out of there. You could see disappointment, the anguish on everyone's face. There was no doubt in my mind that it was these people and I still do not doubt it. If I had to make this decision again, I would do the same again because we had no alternative. I could not live with myself if I had not done anything and sat back. At least I can say to myself that we have exposed these people to the public.

After the trial collapsed I felt that I could not remain in this part of the world. While I was in Jamaica trying to recover from the collapse of the case I felt that there was no way we were going to get any kind of justice. I was able to look back on all that had gone on over the past three years. I knew that the inquest would be coming up soon and I could not stand the thought of sitting in court and seeing these people who were accused of the murder of my son walk away a second time. I decided that

there was no way I could face the inquest. It was not until after I heard that the government had changed that I thought there might be a chance of getting something more positive from the new government. I came back just in time to meet with the new Home Secretary and later on he agreed to set up the public inquiry after listening to some of our concerns. I have been shocked at some of the things we have heard during the progress of the inquiry. We suspected that much had gone wrong but it is clear that it is much worse than we could ever have imagined.

We have exposed some of the things that the police get up to behind the scenes. They make it clear that the investigation of racist murders or attacks are not important and often treat the victims or relatives worse than the suspects. I don't know - it's frightening.

I feel that the Metropolitan Police should be ashamed that they allow members of their force to behave in such a way which. They should find ways of stopping this from happening. If there had been a black policeman in charge of the investigation with powers to do what he wanted, I feel the outcome may have been different. However, if there is a black policeman in charge of the investigation with no power to do what he wants then it will make no difference. If there are black liaison officers, maybe they would see the family in a different light.

I would say that both racism and corruption played a part in this investigation. Racism I think, because the police always see a black person as a criminal - even when they have not committed a crime and are victims. As to corruption, I think that some of the police officers investigating my son's death were connected to the murderers in some way or the other. We kept hearing all sorts of rumours. Nobody can tell me different because I have always had the feeling that this case has not

**WIT 0003 0228**

been dealt with in the right and proper way despite all the publicity. The PCA report confirms much of what I was thinking. One example concerns the delay that occurred in arresting the suspects. They could have been arrested in three days and if they had been we would have had a better result because they would not have had enough time to get rid of certain items of evidence. Fifteen days gave them ample time to get rid of. Why give them so much time ?

I really believed in the officers who reinvestigated Stephen's murder because I thought that we were working closely with them and we were told that they were doing only our case and they were answerable to us in a way.

I feel that because they are all policemen once they realised that the first lot of officers had screwed up, they tried to make sure that we did not find out and were covering their tracks. That is wrong because we had put our confidence in them. In one sense I feel even more let down by the second team of police officers than the initial investigation team.

At the Inquest John Carnt suggested that there were no problems with the first investigation apart from communication with the family. He reached this view having read all the documentation in the case. Does he mean that he would have investigated in the same way? I feel that officers who act like this are even worse than the criminals who killed my son because they are meant to be protecting the community from things like this happening. It is their job and they take money for it. They did not do it properly. Instead of doing it they tried to make sure that we did not find out who did it. They were covering up for the failings of their colleagues.



**WIT 0003 0229**

One of the things that I hope will come out of the inquiry is for everyone to see that the things we have been saying the past five years are true. I hope that this can be a step towards ensuring that when another tragedy is suffered by the black community, the police act responsibly and investigate the crime properly. When a policeman puts his uniform on he should forget all his prejudices. If he cannot do that then he should not be doing the job because that means that one part of the population is not protected from the likes of those who murdered Stephen.

Neville

WIT 0003 0117

Statement of Duwayne Brooks

---

1. Stephen Lawrence was one of my best friends. We met on our first day at secondary school - the Blackheath Bluecoats Church of England School. We were both about 11 years old.
2. Both Steve and I were 18 in 1993 when Steve was murdered.
3. In 1993 Steve was at school and I was at college. We saw each other regularly. We usually met either at my house or his uncle, Martin and wife Millie's house. On April 22 1993 we were together at Martin and Millie's house.
4. In the evening we were hurrying to get back, as Steve wanted to get home as soon as possible. We were just looking for a bus on Well Hall Road. We were attacked by a group of white boys, one of whom shouted "what what nigger".
5. I can't bear to go into the details of it at this stage. So I will recount what happened after the murder.

The scene of the murder

6. As we were running from the attack, Steve fell to the floor opposite the junction to Downham Road. I stopped on the

pavement. I went back and I bent down and looked at him. He was lying by a tree. He was still breathing. I saw his blood running down the floor. He could not speak. I saw his blood running away.

7. I ran across the road to the phone box and dialled 999. I asked for an ambulance. I left the phone hanging to run round the corner to see if the boys were coming back up the road.
8. I saw a white couple. I have since been told they are called Taaffes. They were walking down the road towards the phone box from Shooters Hill. So I ran and asked for their help. They just ignored me. They looked at me and sort of shimmied away, and walked on.
9. I have recently been shown Connor Taaffe's statement. I see he thought that we might be going to rob them. This fits with my recollection of how they behaved towards me when I first approached them.
10. I ran back to the phone box and picked up the receiver and spoke. I told the lady, who said something like I am still here what happened? We had an exchange about where I was. I knew where I was but I looked at a printed card in the phone box. It was wrong, I think it said the post code was SE26. I got confused and frustrated, I don't know whether she could hear me properly. I was shouting.

WIT 0003 0119

11. I can't remember if she asked me for a phone number. I cannot remember exactly what I told her about what happened.

12. I slammed the phone down on the shelf and left.

13. I am told it is said that I kicked the box. I don't recall this but it is possible given how frustrated I was. I was frustrated then because there was no help.

14. I ran out into the road and tried to stop some cars. I was waving my arms around. Cars passed me by. No-one stopped. A white Peugeot 205 slowed down, nearly skidded and nearly knocked me over. It was a white man who was in it. He stopped, looked at me and drove around me.

15. I am now not sure the order in which my trying to stop cars, phoning the ambulance and trying to get the Taaffes to help took place in.

16. A car stopped by Steve. I know now the driver was an off-duty police officer, Mr Geddis, who was with his wife Angela Geddis. He asked what happened and if I had called an ambulance and I told him we had been attacked. I said I tried to call the ambulance.

17. I said we had been attacked, and that an iron bar was used and that it was by white boys.



WIT 0003 0120

18. I was using the f- word, but not at him, in my speech. I don't use other kinds of swear words and didn't on that night.

19. He went into the phone box.

20. I waited with Steve and the Taaffes and Angela Geddis by the side of the road. At first one of them knelt by him, not holding him.

21. I was pacing up and down, up and down. I was crying. I was desperate for the ambulance. It was taking too long. I was frightened by the amount of blood Steve was losing. I saw his life fading away. I didn't know what to do to help him, I was frightened I would do something wrong.

22. Angela Geddis went and crouched down by Steve. I asked if Steve was breathing, She said yes. I kept asking.

23. The Taaffes may have prayed. Mr Taaffe may have told me that Steve was lying in the right position. It is possible that I told one of them that my name was Duwayne and that Steve was my friend. I can't remember.

24. Mr Geddis came back to us.

25. At some point either a woman or a man came and put a blanket on Steve.

WIT 0003 0121

26. Uniformed officers arrived later. They arrived before the ambulance.

27. A uniformed officer who I have since been told is called WPC Bethel came up and asked me who has done this. I said a group of six white boys. I then said where is the f-ing ambulance I didn't call the police. She said they were on their way. I said I'd called them about 15 minutes ago.

28. She said "what has happened?" I was saying where is the ambulance. That's what I wanted to know.

29. I told her we were attacked, but I had got away. She asked me where the boys went and I pointed out the road that they had gone down.

30. When I pointed to her where they had run, she did nothing. She did not make any use of the information. She did not do anything about it like tell the other officer there or anyone on her radio. She didn't ask what the name of the road was.

31. She asked me more than once where they had gone. The second time she asked I said something like "I f-ing told you where they went, are you deaf? Why don't you go and look for them". It was like she didn't believe me. She just kept saying calm down, which made me more frustrated her saying that and doing nothing for Steve.

WIT 0003 0122

32. She asked what they looked like and I said they were a group of white boys.
33. She asked how did we get here? I didn't answer that question.
34. She asked me our names and addresses and I gave them to her.
35. A male uniformed officer came up at one point.
36. She asked questions like who are they to you, what are their names, where do they live? I said I didn't know the boys. She said your friend is lying there and you say you don't know who those boys are!
37. She said, so how did it start, did they chase you for nothing? I said one of them shouted "what what nigger" She and other officers kept asking me what happened and if I was sure of what I was saying.
38. She asked if I had any weapons on me.
39. She was treating me like she was suspicious of me, not like she wanted to help.
40. When she asked me stupid questions I kept saying where is the ambulance, I didn't call for you. I wanted them to get

WIT 0003 0123

him to hospital, and there they were talking rubbish in my ears and walking up and down doing nothing. I knew the hospital was only two minutes up the road. I became increasingly frustrated and loud and agitated.

41. I asked her and other officers more than once why couldn't they put Steve in the car and drive him to hospital. They said that they couldn't do that. They never gave a reason they just said I should calm down and "be sensible about it for your friend's sake". How could they say to me "calm down!" when they weren't doing anything about the situation?.

42. I got the impression that the police were repulsed by the blood that was there or on the whole they just didn't want to help. They should have known what to do. However horrible they found the blood it was their job to do something to help him. They did not do anything useful.

43. While I was talking to WPC Bethel I was walking up and down, pacing out of frustration and helplessness, and looking for the ambulance. She kept saying stand still, but I didn't.

44. I didn't answer those of her questions which I thought were stupid. I only answered her sensible questions. A sensible question she didn't ask would have been: "shall I drive you in the direction where they ran?"



45. If she had asked for more detail of the boys' descriptions or what they were wearing I would have told her. Those would have been sensible questions.

46. I have been told that she said that I said I did not witness the assault. This is not true.

47. She did not ask if I was all right or if I had been attacked.

48. She did not take notes.

49. Those by Steve were near enough so they would have heard me when I was shouting, I shouted when I was saying why can't you put him in the car, but they wouldn't have heard her questions.

50. She wandered off at some stage and came back. I didn't see her go to Steve at all but she could have done and I didn't notice. Another uniformed woman police officer came up at one point and joined in the questioning. I have been told she is called WPC Smith.

51. I heard something come over the radio saying the ambulance is at Well Hall roundabout - can't you see it? It wasn't her radio. I couldn't see the ambulance.

52. I started going frantic saying where is the ambulance? As

WIT 0003 0125

the ambulance didn't come and she was asking stupid questions I got more and more wound up. I could feel the ambulance was going to be too late.

53. Various officers came and told me to calm down for my friend's sake. I again asked some of them to take Steve to the hospital but they wouldn't.

54. I overheard on the radio that the ambulance was coming from Shooter's Hill. Then a male police officer went off to go and get it. This may have been PC Gleason.

55. One uniformed officer went up to Steve and shined a torch in his face, "I said why are you doing that?" He said " It is supposed to be good for you" He carried on doing it. He was kneeling down. I walked off. I didn't know whether to believe him or not.

56. One male uniformed officer was different from the others. He asked me if I was injured in any way and if I needed to sit down. I said no I was fine. I cannot describe what he looked like. I have been asked if he had grey hair or a grey moustache. He didn't.

57. Apart from this one officer no-one asked me if I was injured. No-one asked me if I had been attacked. No -one asked me if I was all right.

58. None of the uniformed officers were doing anything for Steve. They should have known what to do. They should have done something for Steve. No-one appeared to be doing anything with the information I gave them about the attackers. They just stood there doing nothing. No-one went down Dickson Road after the boys.

59. None of the officers asked me if I would recognise any of the boys again. I obviously would have said yes if they had asked. I note PC Gleason says that I didn't give enough information to make a street id. This is unfair. I gave them the information that they asked for and I could have recognised the boys if they took me around.

60. I note PC Gleason says I was "virtually uncontrollable." What did they need to control me for? They should have taken control of the situation and organised help for Steve and chasing the boys. I have been told that other officers said I was "hysterical". I was very upset and frustrated but I was not out of control or hysterical. I was perfectly capable of answering sensible questions and giving information as I did do.

61. The first time anyone made any use of that information that I gave them was when different police arrived - a police carrier came down the hill and parked near us. An officer went to the passenger side and pointed in the direction of Dickson road. It left in that direction almost straight

WIT 0003 0127

- away. I saw no-one get out. I didn't see where it actually went to.
62. This was sometime after the first uniformed police arrived. It seemed like ages - it may have been about 10 minutes - but I don't know how long exactly.
63. Then another police carrier came the other way, turned round, stopped and went off.
64. I was very upset. I was wound up by the officers. I was very angry at the boys and increasingly at the officers and because the ambulance was not coming.
65. The ambulance arrived. Mr Salih says it takes 6 minutes to get there from Greenwich District Hospital and I think that is just about right.
66. Mr Mann, the other ambulance man, put a plastic thing in Steve's mouth - the thing you are meant to carry to save people's lives.
67. They carried Steve to the ambulance on a stretcher. His unopened ginger beer can fell from him onto the floor. I picked it up. I took it home and kept it in my room, until one day it exploded.
68. I tried to get into the ambulance with Steve but police



officers would not let me. They said there was no space. I really wanted to be in the ambulance with Steve. I wanted to be with him. I wanted to see what was happening.

69. When they wouldn't let me I thought, well the hospital is only two minutes up the road, and agreed to go in a police car.

70. I don't remember much about the journey except that I told the driver to hurry up. I am told that WPC Joanne Smith says she drove me to the hospital. I am told she said I called the police "pigs" and used the word "c--t". I did not. I don't use those words.

#### The hospital

71. When I got to the hospital I walked behind the stretcher. Steve went into a different room. One of the nurses asked me to go with her, but I said it's ok and walked off. I went into a waiting room. I sat, and then I walked around.

72. A policeman came up, and said that he wanted to talk to me, to help my friend.

73. I was most probably shouting and walking off. He told me his name. I now know it's PC Gleason. He said he needed to take a statement of what happened. I don't know what I said. I lent on the reception counter. I kept walking

**WIT 0003 0129**

- off. It took a long time. I kept stopping. He kept saying I need a statement, I need a statement.
74. He kept asking me whether it was true that the boys said "what what nigger?"
75. He took notes in his book. I didn't read the notebook. I don't remember signing it, but that is my signature on his notebook.
76. Some of Steve's family arrived.
77. I was told that Steve was dead when I was in an office. I don't want to talk about it.
78. I was taken to see his body. I don't want to talk about it.
79. At the hospital nobody enquired if I was all right or if I had been attacked. I was offered no comfort.
80. A policeman said that I couldn't leave. He said I had to go to the police station to make a statement. He said you can either wait here or go and sit in the police car until you are taken to the station so that "we won't lose you".
81. I didn't want to be in the hospital so I chose the police car option.

82. I wanted to leave and go home. I felt I couldn't. I felt if I left the police would have stopped me and arrested me.

83. The police man walked me to the car. It was parked in front of the hospital where the ambulances were. He asked me to wait until I was taken to the police station. I said ok and sat in the car on my own.

84. It felt like I was in the police car in the car park for half an hour or an hour.

#### Plumstead Police Station

85. I was then driven to Plumstead Police Station. I can't remember who took me or what was said on the way.

86. When we got to the police station the car went round the back and parked in the car park. I was taken in the back entrance of the station.

87. As far as I can remember I was taken up some stairs and into a room.

88. I remember sitting in a room and being calm.

89. I now know that in their statements the police said I broke a window in the front office. I didn't, I wasn't even in

**WIT 0003 0131**

the front office. It just shows that they were treating me like a criminal and not like a victim.

90. I was waiting in a room opposite a big room. I can remember being in the room for what felt like ages.

91. Most of the time I was sat there on my own. An officer was in there standing up. He told me he had to stay in the room to look after me. I took it he meant to stop me wandering off or doing wrong.

92. He chatted with me. He was waiting for a senior officer to come. I think it may have been for an area commander but that may be wrong. He was filling in time.

93. He asked me if I wanted tea. I don't drink tea so I said no thank you. He asked me if I was all right. I said yeah.

94. Nobody asked me whether I wanted to be at the station or whether I would prefer to go home. Nobody asked me where I would like to have my statement taken.

95. Before my statement was taken a senior officer talked to me briefly about what had happened. The senior officer I saw was a small man. I can't remember much of the conversation except I told him that we had been attacked by a group of white boys one of whom said "what what nigger".



96. The officer who took the statement from me was DC Cooper.
97. Before and perhaps during the statement taking, someone came in and asked me to go with them to see how the investigation was taking place, and took me into the big room. This happened about twice. A number of officers said that I was important to this investigation and that was why I had to tell the truth.
98. They kept saying are you sure they said "what what nigger"? I remember someone, maybe the same senior officer, saying you know what this means if you are telling the truth , are you sure they said "what what nigger?" I said I am telling the truth. He said "you mean you have done nothing to provoke this in any way?" I said "no, we were just waiting for a bus".
99. I thought either they thought I was lying or they wanted to do a Jedi mind trick on me so that I would lie and say that it didn't happen. I thought that because they kept on at me. It was mainly the senior officer. I wanted to start shouting and calling them idiots but I couldn't, I was just too tired. It was this senior officer that they were waiting for before DC Cooper took my statement.
100. Both DC Cooper and the senior officer were suspicious of my account of how we were attacked.

**WIT 0003 0133**

101. I can't remember the names of the officers who I met in the  
in the big room.

102. I was keen to make a statement. I was keen to get it over  
and done with. I don't know what time we started doing  
the statement but I do remember getting home about 7 am.

103. DC Cooper asked me whether I wanted anyone with me. He  
was the only police officer to ask that. As it would have  
delayed everything to fetch someone I said I didn't, I  
just wanted to get it over and done with.

104. I wished I'd gone home from the hospital and slept and come  
back the next day. DC Cooper said if you want to go you  
can go, but I said no now I am here I want to get it over  
with. When he said that it was the first time I realise  
that I had had a choice about going home.

105. DC Cooper did not give me an idea of long how it would take  
to give the statement.

106. DC Cooper said ok lets start from the beginning. He asked  
me questions and I answered them. He was writing down my  
answers.

107. While I was answering the questions and giving my statement  
an officer told me that my mum was at the police station.  
I thought giving the statement would be over soon so at

WIT 0003 0134

first I said I would finish it and then see her. But it took so long I asked to see her. They took me to a different room and she was brought in with Everton. I told my mum what had happened. What I said upset her. She said: " it's a racist murder". An officer told her to calm down. He said we don't know that yet, we are trying to establish the facts. I knew I knew the facts and that I had told them to the officers. I wanted to say something. I couldn't because I would have started crying.

108. I went back to making my statement.

109. While he was taking my statement DC Cooper asked the size of my foot and then said we need to take your trainers from you to take a foot print. I gave him my trainers. I was thinking what do you want them for? I haven't committed any burglaries, but I didn't say anything because I didn't want to make the suspicions of me worse.

110. There is nothing in my statement about the colour of the attacker's hair. I was telling DC Cooper everything I could. If he had asked me the colour I would have told him, just as I told PC Gleason.

111. At the end DC Cooper asked me to read my statement and sign it. I was so tired. I just scanned it and signed it.

112. At no stage did any officer ask me whether any of the

WIT 0003 0135

white boys attacked me or touched me, or did they ask me for any of my clothes except to take the print off my trainers as I have mentioned. Noone asked me more than is set out in the Section 9 statement that DC Cooper took that night.

113. I remember an officer driving me home. I got there about 7am.

114. I spent the days after playing my Nintendo at home. This was a hostel. It was a half way house to getting a flat from a housing association. There were about six of us each with our own room kitchen and bathroom.

115. I note that the AMIP meeting of 25 4 93 says that I was not in the hostel. I was. The police came round and asked if I was ok after a couple of days. The police offered me protection. I think that it may have been DS Bevan who asked me. He did not tell me why I might need it, so I said no.

116. DS Bevan told me that he was my liaison officer. He said he was on the investigation. He said I should ask him for things I needed.

117. At no stage did he or any other officer ask me if I had been attacked nor did he refer me to victim support or



offer me counselling nor did he advise me about the CICB.

118. At no stage did he or any officer consult me about whether I wished to press charges for the attack on me. They didn't treat me as a victim of crime.

119. At no stage did he or any officer advise me who to speak to or who not to speak to about what I had experienced and seen.

120. They didn't say keep it quiet or tell the world, to see if anyone recognised my description of the attackers.

121. Eventually they themselves advertised part of my description of one of the attackers.

122. At the time DS Bevan seemed to treat me more seriously than the other officers did, so I trusted him a bit more than I did the other police.

123. I saw DS Bevan on a number of occasions. I am concerned that they have become a jumble in my mind, so I would like to see his records of them before I make a detailed statement about them.

124. Some time soon after the murder I heard that fascists had been looking for me at the school that Steve and I went to.

WIT 0003 0137

I had heard that headmaster told the school assembly that I had been with Steve that night. I heard the fascists had looked for other black students at other schools. That made me frightened.

125. I told the police and they did nothing. I became frightened that the murderers would come and find me. John Bevan told me that some of the other witnesses were under protection.

I wanted the police to find the people who were looking for me and to find the murderers.

126. I can't remember if I asked then for protection then. I was confused and frightened. I was frightened that the murderers would get me but I was frightened of the police. It was unbelievable that they had not arrested anyone. I didn't trust their investigation.

127. I cannot recall the detail or order of all the meetings with the officers. They told me that there were other witnesses, I asked them questions about them but they didn't tell me anything.

128. I remember that they had not located the woman getting on the bus and I told one of the officers that I thought she was French as I heard her speak when she got on the bus.

129. Arrangements were made by police for me to do an artist's sketch at my home. I did it on 6 May 1993. I thought it

was a good likeness but I couldn't fix the eyes

130. I was not referred to my earlier statement on this day, I just had to think back and answer the questions. Nor was I referred to PC Gleason's notebook when I was giving my section 9 statement to DC Cooper.

131. I later did a computer sketch at Peckham Police Station. That was accurate too. I am told DS Bevan says that I played pool with him afterwards, this is correct. He also said I had tea, this isn't right. I don't drink tea.

132. I had a lot more contact with the police, including three identification parades that I would like to deal with in the second part of my statement.

Demonstration, 8 May 1993 and Croydon Prosecution

133. On 8 May I went to a large anti - racist demonstration outside the British National Party headquarters in Welling. I went to protest against Steve's murder and the way the police were handling it.

134. In October 1993 I was arrested and charged with offenses arising out of the demonstration of the previous May. They waited 5 months to prosecute me. They waited until after the Crown Prosecution Service had decided to drop the prosecution against the killers. It was devastating. I

**WIT 0003 0139**

had no convictions at the time of the murder. It felt like the police and prosecutors decided to get at me to ruin my reputation - and the chance of any future prosecution of the murderers.

135. But the Judge at Croydon Crown Court wasn't having any of it. In December 1994 he stopped the prosecution saying that it was an abuse of the process of the Court.

136. In April 1994 I had been diagnosed as suffering from Post Traumatic Stress Disorder.

137. I'd like to pause this part of my evidence now with something about police protection.

#### Police Protection

138. I was frightened for my life, I had heard that other witnesses had been given protection. I was most scared when the case came into the media and there were Court hearings. I would like to say how unsafe I felt, and sometimes still feel. For now I can just recount the protection during the hearings.

139. I was not given any police protection during the Magistrates Court hearing, but I was during the Old Bailey hearing.



140. During that hearing I stayed at 4 different hotels. They were not very nice. It was with different officers each time, except one set of officers may have stayed two nights. On one occasion one of the officers who had arrested me for the demonstration, I think it was DC Dougall, was there.

141. On another night I was taken to an Eltham hotel. The police didn't explain why they chose Eltham. It was the worst area of London they could have chosen. It felt like they took me to Eltham to break my spirit. I didn't sleep that night, because I was frightened to be in my room. I spent the night downstairs watching television, scared. The next day, weak and tired, I had to give my evidence in Court.

142. I think of Steve every day. I am sad for his other friends and his family. I'm sad confused and pissed about this system where racists attack and go free, but innocent victims like Steve and I are treated as criminals; where at the scene of a murder the police let Steve die on the street without helping him, and at the outset ignored me when I pointed out where the killers had run to and refused to believe me that it was a racist attack.

143. Steve and I were young black men. Racist thugs killed Steve and shattered my life. Ignorant racism in Mr Condon's police force rubbished our chances of convicting

**WIT 0003 0158**

the killers.

Signed: 

Dated 6 April 1998



## Appendix 5: Schedule of witnesses who appeared before Part One of the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry

Day 1	16 March 1998	Application by Michael Mansfield QC
Day 2	24 March 1998	Opening remarks by Chairman and Advisers followed by opening speeches from: Edmund Lawson QC (for the Inquiry) Michael Mansfield QC (for the Lawrence family) Jeremy Gompertz QC (for the Metropolitan Police Service)
Day 3	25 March 1998	Part statement of Doreen Lawrence read Police Constable Linda Bethel Police Constable James Geddis
Day 4	26 March 1998	Conor Taaffe Police Constable Anthony Gleason Police Constable Joanne Smith Police Sergeant Nigel Clement (part heard)
Day 5	27 March 1998	Police Sergeant Nigel Clement (part heard) Geoffrey Mann Michael Salih Catherine Avery Helen Avery Graham Cook
Day 6	30 March 1998	David Sadler Police Constable Stephen Hughes Statements read: Brian Wolfe Denise Wolfe Dr Priti Patel Part statement of Neville Lawrence read Superintendent Jonathan McIvor
Day 7	31 March 1998	Russell Mansford Mandy Lavin PC Michael Pinecoffin Detective Sergeant Donald Mackenzie
Day 8	1 April 1998	Police Sergeant Nigel Clement Police Sergeant Andrew Hodges Inspector Steven Groves (part heard)
Day 9	2 April 1998	Inspector Steven Groves Police Constable Paul McGarry Police Constable Paul Robson Police Constable Samantha Tatton Police Constable Paul Smith
Day 10	6 April 1998	Detective Constable Steven Pye Chief Superintendent Christopher Benn



Day 11	7 April 1998	Inspector Ian Little Detective Constable Keith Hughes (part heard)
Day 12	8 April 1998	Detective Constable Keith Hughes Detective Inspector Philip Jeynes
Day 13	20 April 1998	Detective Sergeant David Cooper Detective Sergeant John Sparrowhawk Statements read: John Moroney Anthony Goodman Stephen Mendom Dev Barraah (part heard)
Day 14	21 April 1998	Detective Sergeant David Kirkpatrick Detective Constable Neil Stoddart Detective Sergeant Phillip Sheridan
Day 15	23 April 1998	Detective Inspector Clifford Davies Detective Sergeant Steven Knight Philip Pitham Detective Constable Peter Canavan
Day 16	24 April 1998	Detective Constable Michael Tomlin (part heard) Detective Constable Dennis Chase Detective Sergeant John Davidson (part heard)
Day 17	27 April 1998	Detective Constable Michael Tomlin Detective Sergeant John Davidson
Day 18	28 April 1998	Detective Constable Christopher Budgen Detective Constable Martin Hughes Detective Inspector John Bevan (part heard)
Day 19	29 April 1998	Detective Inspector John Bevan
Day 20	30 April 1998	Statements read: Detective Sergeant David Ashwell Chief Superintendent Kenneth Chapman Detective Inspector Michael Martin May Royston Westbrook Inspector Laurence Slone Statements read: Inspector John McIlgrew Inspector Barry Craig Sergeant Albert Russell William House
Day 21	5 May 1998	Detective Constable Linda Holden Police Constable David Pennington
Day 22	6 May 1998	Detective Sergeant Christopher Mould Stephen Christopher Fuller Detective Constable Robert Crane Adrian Wain (part heard)

Day 23	7 May 1998	Adrian Wain Dr Angela Gallop Detective Sergeant Christopher Crowley (part heard)
Day 24	8 May 1998	Detective Sergeant Christopher Crowley Inspector John McIlgrew
Day 25	13 May 1998	Detective Superintendent Ian Crampton (part heard)
Day 26	14 May 1998	Detective Superintendent Ian Crampton (part heard)
Day 27	15 May 1998	Statement of Duwayne Brooks read Detective Inspector Michael Barley
Day 28	18 May 1998	Detective Inspector Benjamin Bullock (part heard)
Day 29	19 May 1998	Detective Inspector Benjamin Bullock
Day 30	20 May 1998	Detective Superintendent Ian Crampton (part heard)
Day 31	26 May 1998	Detective Superintendent Ian Crampton Detective Superintendent Brian Weeden (part heard)
Day 32	27 May 1998	Detective Superintendent Brian Weeden (part heard)
Day 33	28 May 1998	Detective Superintendent Brian Weeden (part heard)
Day 34	29 May 1998	Detective Superintendent Brian Weeden Ahmet Ratip Detective Sergeant Peter Flook (part heard)
Day 35	1 June 1998	Detective Sergeant Peter Flook Detective Chief Superintendent Michael Burdis (part heard)
Day 36	2 June 1998	Detective Chief Superintendent William Ilsley (part heard) Detective Chief Superintendent Michael Burdis
Day 37	3 June 1998	Detective Chief Superintendent William Ilsley (part heard)
Day 38	4 June 1998	Detective Chief Superintendent William Ilsley Commander Raymond Adams (part heard) Detective Chief Superintendent John Barker (part heard)
Day 39	8 June 1998	Detective Chief Superintendent John Barker Deputy Assistant Commissioner David Osland (part heard)
Day 40	9 June 1998	Deputy Assistant Commissioner David Osland
Day 41	10 June 1998	Deputy Assistant Commissioner David Osland Commander Hugh Blenkin (part heard)
Day 42	11 June 1998	Commander Hugh Blenkin Doreen Lawrence Neville Lawrence Detective Superintendent William Mellish (part heard)
Day 43	15 June 1998	Detective Superintendent William Mellish (part heard)
Day 44	16 June 1998	Detective Superintendent William Mellish Acting Commissioner Perry Nove
Day 45	17 June 1998	Assistant Commissioner Ian Johnston
Day 46	22 June 1998	Chief Superintendent John Philpott (part heard)
Day 47	23 June 1998	Chief Superintendent John Philpott Police Sergeant Peter Solley (part heard)


Day 48	24 June 1998	Police Sergeant Peter Solley Police Constable Alan Fisher (part heard)
Day 49	25 June 1998	Police Constable Alan Fisher Harcourt Alleyne Dev Barrah Statements read: Richard Shepherd Andrew Mitchell QC Statement of Peter Finch summarised
Day 50	29 June 1998	Jamie Acourt Neil Acourt David Norris (part heard)
Day 51	30 June 1998	David Norris Luke Knight Gary Dobson Statements read: Phillip Medwynter Graham Grant-Whyte
Day 52	1 July 1998	Phillip Medwynter Howard Youngerwood
Day 53	2 July 1998	Superintendent Leslie Owen Detective Chief Inspector Alan Buttivant Statements summarised: Vivienne Pert Anthony Connell
Day 54	16 July 1998	Commander Raymond Adams Detective Sergeant John Davidson (recalled) Detective Constable Christopher Budgen (recalled)
Day 55	17 July 1998	Statement of Commander James Gibson summarised Imran Khan (part heard)
Day 56	20 July 1998	Imran Khan Statement read: Michael Mansfield QC
Day 57	17 Sept 1998	Closing submission, Michael Mansfield QC
Day 58	18 Sept 1998	Closing submission, Jeremy Gompertz QC Closing submission, Sonia Woodley QC Closing submission, Michael Egan
Day 59	19 Sept 1998	Closing submission, Ian Macdonald QC Closing submission, William Panton Closing submission, Jeffrey Yearwood Closing submission, Mukul Chawla Closing submission, Brian Barker QC



## Appendix 6: Family liaison letter written by Commander Ray Adams on 30 April 1993

reference: .  
reference:  
Date: 30 April 1993

J R Jones Esq  
J R Jones Solicitors  
58A The Mall  
Ealing  
London W5 3TA

  
METROPOLITAN  
POLICE

METROPOLITAN POLICE SERVICE  
3 Area Headquarters

20 Well Hall Road  
London SE9 6SF  
Telephone 081-853 8212  
Facsimile 081-850 0474

Direct line 081-853

Dear Mr Jones

Re Murder of Stephen Lawrence

In response to your recent letters and in particular that of 29 April 1993.

As you are aware Chief Superintendent Philpott is the officer responsible for policing activity within Plumstead Division. The murder of Stephen Lawrence is being conducted, on his behalf, by Detective Superintendent Weeden. The appointment of a senior detective from the Area Major Investigation Team is normal practice in these circumstances.

In the overwhelming majority of murder investigations liaison with the family of the victim is direct. It is most unusual for the appointment of Solicitors to represent the family interest as there is no conflict of interest or purpose. Police are of course fully aware of the private and public concern and distress over the murder of Stephen. To address these concerns Detective Superintendent Weeden appointed liaison officers from within his team to deal with enquiries and concern from both Mr and Mrs Lawrence.

You are no doubt aware of the conference at Eltham Police Station on 28 April 1993, when Deputy Assistant Commissioner Osland, the officer commanding 3 Area, met with members of the Commission for Racial Equality, Bexley and Greenwich Councils. At the meeting concern was expressed that the murder investigation team were being inundated with enquiries from the many parties interested in the progress of the enquiry. It was said that the level of enquiry was distracting the team from the task in hand. Appreciating the genuineness of most enquiries Chief Superintendent Philpott asked that all such enquiries be channelled to either Chief Inspector Whapham, Plumstead Police Station, or himself.

On reading your particular correspondence it occurs to me that whilst many of your questions ask about the sort of information that is generally provided to families of victims some is not. In particular the information requested at 1. of your letter dated 26.4.93 is not material that is normally released.

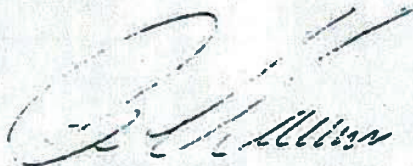


I was concerned to read your comments in your letter of 29.4.93 concerning the liaison arrangements with Mr and Mrs Lawrence. I have discussed this with Mr Weeden, the arrangements and briefing of the officers is being examined. We shall also be talking to both Mr and Mrs Lawrence to satisfy them of our earnest wish to do everything to keep them properly informed.

I think you will agree with me that we must all do everything in our power to ensure that those responsible for the murder of Stephen are brought to justice. I ask that you resist the temptation to enquire direct with the Senior Investigating Officer or his team. Chief Superintendent Philpott is available as well as I to assist you and other interested parties.

I trust my comments assist you in your delicate task.

Yours sincerely

A handwritten signature in dark ink, appearing to read 'R Adams', is written over a light blue grid background.

R Adams  
Commander (Support)

## Appendix 7: Correspondence between the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry and Deputy Commissioner Stevens, June and September 1998

11 Jun '98 11:06 P.01

4/11/98

### THE INQUIRY INTO THE MATTERS ARISING FROM THE DEATH OF STEPHEN LAWRENCE

Chairman: Sir William Macpherson of Cluny  
Secretary: Stephen Wells  
Room 313  
Hannibal House  
Elephant & Castle  
London SE1 6TE

Telephone No: 0171 277 4326  
Fax No: 0171 708 4665

11 June 1998

Mr John Stevens QPM  
Deputy Commissioner  
Metropolitan Police  
New Scotland Yard  
Broadway  
London SW1H 0BG (By fax)

*Dear Mr Stevens*

I am writing to you on behalf of the Chairman of this Inquiry, in the light of the front page report in today's Guardian "Police corruption exposed".

I would be grateful for your confirmation - as soon as possible - that your investigation does not extend to any officers involved in the Stephen Lawrence case; or any relatives or associates of Clifford Norris, the father of one (David Norris) of the original suspects in this case.

*Yours sincerely*



STEPHEN WELLS

MPS CHARTER	
RECEIVED	REPLY IF REQUIRED BY
11 JUN 1998	
DEPUTY COMMISSIONER'S OFFICE	

**John A Stevens OPM LL.B M.Phil CIMgt**  
**Deputy Commissioner of Police of the Metropolis**



**METROPOLITAN POLICE SERVICE**

**New Scotland Yard**  
**Broadway**  
**London SW1H 0BG**  
**Telephone 0171-230 1212**

**Stephen Wells Esq**  
**Secretary to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry**  
**Room 313**  
**Hannibal House**  
**Elephant & Castle**  
**London SE1 6TE**

**12 June 1998**

*Len Morris*

Thank you for your letter dated 11 June 1998. I can confirm that no police officer or former police officer who has been called or is due to give evidence to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry is under investigation for corruption at this time.

During the preparation for the current investigation a considerable amount of intelligence of various value was gathered. Many documents were examined including those relating to "Operation Russell" and the death of Detective Constable Alan Holmes, both of which have been made available to the Inquiry Chairman. An intelligence database was created and the names of some of the witnesses to the Inquiry were included. However, the intelligence does not necessarily indicate corrupt or suspect behaviour and much of it is background information. None of the intelligence I refer to is being developed at this stage, although it relates to witnesses to the Inquiry.

There are no records relating to Clifford Norris or David Norris or any of their known associates or relatives. There are a few and not very full references to a David Norris who was murdered in Belvedere in 1991. He is not thought to be related to Clifford or David Norris. The intelligence I refer to is a matter of extreme sensitivity and disclosure of it or its existence could considerably hamper our investigations into corruption. Although I will assist your Inquiry in every aspect, I am sure you will understand that we would have to try to restrict the publication of this material by the use of public interest immunity.

2

Should I be able to assist you any further in relation to this matter please do not  
hesitate to contact me personally.

Yours Sincerely,

A handwritten signature in black ink, appearing to read "Adam Stevens".

Deputy Commissioner



**John A Stevens QPM LL.B M.Phil CIMgt**  
*Deputy Commissioner of Police of the Metropolis*



**METROPOLITAN POLICE SERVICE**

New Scotland Yard  
Broadway  
London SW1H 0BG  
Telephone 0171-230 1212

**Stephen Wells Esq.**  
**Secretary to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry**  
**Room 313**  
**Hannibal House**  
**Elephant & Castle**  
**London SE1 6TE**

**11 September 1998**

*Dear Stephen,*

I write further to my letter dated 6 June 1998 in which I indicated that no police officer or former police officer called to give evidence to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry was under investigation for corruption.

I should now make you aware that recent information has enabled officers investigating offences of alleged corruption to open new lines of enquiry. One of those lines of enquiry has implicated ex-Detective Sergeant John Davidson. The information became available on 28 July and was developed resulting in the search of Davidson's home address on 10 September 1998. He was not arrested and the investigation continues.

There is no connection between the investigation and Clifford Norris, any of his known relatives or associates or any other person connected to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry.

I will inform you if this, or any other corruption enquiry, appears to be connected to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry.

I would again wish to stress the extreme sensitivity of our corruption investigations and the intelligence and evidence supporting them.

*Yours sincerely,*  
*John Stevens*

**Deputy Commissioner**

828/98

## THE INQUIRY INTO THE MATTERS ARISING FROM THE DEATH OF STEPHEN LAWRENCE

Chairman: Sir William Macpherson of Cluny  
Secretary: Stephen Wells  
Room 313  
Hannibal House  
Elephant & Castle  
London SE1 6TE

Telephone No: 0171 277 4326  
Fax No: 0171 708 4665

21 September 1998

J A Stevens Esq QPM  
Deputy Commissioner  
Metropolitan Police Service  
New Scotland Yard  
Broadway  
London SW1H 0BG

*Dear Deputy Commissioner —*

Thank you for your letter of 11 September.

We have seen that the press have now given ex-Sergeant John Davidson's name as one of the officers whose home has been searched in connection with new lines of enquiry into alleged corruption.

Mr Davidson was, as you know, a central witness in this Inquiry. Strong allegations were made against him, including allegations that he "*back pedalled*" the investigation and that he lied about the registration of a most important witness as an informant. His evidence will be familiar to you and your team.

Naturally we are most concerned to know whether any contact, however remote, may have existed between Mr Davidson and, in particular, Clifford Norris, [REDACTED] (known here as XX), or anybody involved in the Clifford/Alexander Norris drug cases of 1988-1989, which led to their conviction.

You will also appreciate that any wrongdoing would go to Mr Davidson's credit. So that we simply ask that we should be kept up to date with any developments concerning this retired officer. Much may turn upon this as the Inquiry proceeds.

We are most grateful for your help in this connection. Naturally we accept that this is a matter to be "*channelled*" through the Inquiry and not through Mr Imran Khan.

*Yours sincerely,  
William Macpherson of Cluny*

SIR WILLIAM MACPHERSON OF CLUNY



## Appendix 8: Letter to the interested parties dated 25 June 1998

### THE INQUIRY INTO THE MATTERS ARISING FROM THE DEATH OF STEPHEN LAWRENCE

Chairman: Sir William Macpherson of Cluny  
Secretary: Stephen Wells  
Room 313  
Hannibal House  
Elephant & Castle  
London SE1 6TE

Fax No: 0171 740 4301  
Direct Line: 0171-740 4311

25 June 1998

#### To the represented parties

Pursuant to various requests made by the advisers to Mr & Mrs. Lawrence, the Chairman and his Advisers (and counsel to the Inquiry) have considered a very substantial quantity of documents, which were suggested by those advisers to have some bearing on the evidence of ex-Commander Adams. The Chairman has directed me to indicate his decisions (with which his advisers agree) concerning these documents, as follows:

- “1. We have been asked to consider many documents alleged to have some bearing on Mr. Adams’ evidence. The applications relating to those documents would, in litigation, have been regarded and at least largely dismissed as a ‘fishing expedition’; but, having been told by responsible lawyers that there were reasonable grounds for suspecting the existence of relevant material in those documents, we were bound to spend a large amount of time looking at papers.
2. We were asked - to consider whether there were further documents which ought to be published to the parties and thus would or could enter the public domain relating to the following topics:
  - (1) Adams’ medical retirement
  - (2) Adams’ record as per his personal file
  - (3) Adams’ involvement with David Norris, deceased, as an informant
  - (4) Disciplinary investigations involving allegations made against Adams.
3. We have carefully considered documents relating to all the above. Our decisions are as follows:
  - (1) Medical retirement: we have seen documents recording that (a) Adams was recorded as absent through “back disorders” from 04.05.93 and that he did not resume duty before retiring on 31.08.93; (b) on 07.05.93 Adams was recommended by the Force MO for medical retirement on the grounds of chronic back pain, an injury award being made by reason of his condition being attributable to or contributed to by an injury on duty; and (c) on 07.06.93 it was reported that Adams was “likely to be hospital for the next 3 weeks” and that his retirement would formally occur on 31.08.93. We see no reason to direct disclosure of any documents concerning his retirement. The facts above may be referred-to if relevant to any issue.



(2) The personal file: we have read Adams' personal file. It contains nothing whatsoever to Adams' detriment and does not refer to anything touching upon this Inquiry. There is no reason to disclose the file.

(3) Involvement with D. Norris, dec'd: the Inquiry was asked to look into this topic in the light of Adams' statement to the Inquiry in which he referred to having been co-ordinator of 9RCS (later, SERCS) between July 1985 & January 1987, during which time, he says, he "was involved in the management of an informant, David Norris."

We called for the SERCS 'contact-files' relating to Norris, dec'd. Those files contained no reference to Adams; further there is no reference therein either to Clifford Norris or to any police officer known to us in the course of this Inquiry. The files contain information irrelevant to this Inquiry which information is still - and reasonably - regarded as sensitive. There is no proper basis for disclosing any of these files.

DI Barley has produced for the inspection of the Inquiry all correspondence dockets which contain reference to Adams. We have inspected them: they reveal Adams to have been concerned with various applications concerning Norris, dec'd, as an informant, between October 1986 and March 1988: his involvement was that of a senior officer seeking or giving authority for various steps taken concerning Norris dec'd, including the provision of confidential information to judges before whom Norris appeared for sentence and recommending rewards.

There is, in our firm view, nothing in any of that material which bears upon the issues being considered in this Inquiry. For that reason we are currently not minded to allow questioning of Adams as to the above: if we are persuaded that it is of any relevance, we will permit the facts, as above, to be referred to; but we do not consider it appropriate to allow cross examination of Adams or others on this topic.

(4) Disciplinary investigations

There have been produced to us voluminous papers relating to disciplinary investigations conducted in the late 1980s by Winship and by Wagstaff. Winship's principal investigation, known as Operation Russell, was carried out subject to PCA supervision. None of these investigations resulted in any criminal or disciplinary proceedings against any officer or revealed any established facts in any way relevant to the issues before this Inquiry. The PCA agreed that no disciplinary proceedings should be brought. We have previously directed that unsubstantiated allegations cannot properly be introduced, the law forbidding reliance to be placed upon them: *R. v. John Edwards* and *R. v. Guney*.

Adams was given "suitable advice" in relation to one incident which occurred in 1987. Having regard, however, to (a) the time elapsed between 1987 and the events under review in this Inquiry; (b) the lack of any connection between the 1987 events and persons alleged to have played a role in the Stephen Lawrence investigation; and (c) Adams' very limited role in the latter investigation, we do not consider it appropriate or necessary to direct the disclosure of any documents relating to the above; neither does it appear to us appropriate to permit cross-examination of Adams concerning the disciplinary investigations.

4. Mr. Mansfield QC has informed us of further enquiries being made by his team relating to Adams. We think it unlikely that we would wish to change the directions above whatever may result from those enquiries; but, of course, those directions will

be reviewed if any further information or evidence comes to light making such review appropriate. We have asked that the MPS keep the voluminous documents referred to above available lest any review is necessary.”

If any party wishes to make further representations to the Chairman in relation to the above, such representations should, in the first instance, be addressed to him in writing.

A handwritten signature in black ink, consisting of a large, stylized 'S' followed by a smaller 'W' and a trailing flourish.

**STEPHEN WELLS**

**Secretary to the Inquiry**



## **Appendix 9: Media reports published in March 2012**

### ***The Independent, 6 March 2012***

#### ***The copper, the Lawrence killer's father, and secret police files that expose a 'corrupt relationship'***

The failure of the original hunt for the killers of Stephen Lawrence will come under fresh scrutiny today following the emergence of secret Scotland Yard files which reveal police concerns about one of the officers involved in the inquiry.

The police intelligence reports, obtained by The Independent, outline extensive allegations of corruption against John Davidson, a lead detective investigating the racist murder. The files can be made public following the convictions in January, 19 years after the event, of Gary Dobson, 36, and David Norris, 35.

It can also be revealed that details of the officer's alleged criminality were held back from the public and the Lawrence family's legal team.

The Lawrence family last night demanded that the Metropolitan Police explain why it never showed them the files or revealed their existence. Doreen Lawrence said: "Had we known even a scintilla of this in the last 18 years, we would have been shouting it from the rafters."

The Lawrence family has long suspected that corruption played a part in the Met's failure to arrest Dobson, Norris and three other members of a white gang, despite dozens of people coming forward to name them within days of the 1993 fatal stabbing in south-east London. There have been numerous Met internal inquiries and an inquiry by the police watchdog. But vital facts relevant to the Lawrence case have not been made public. The evidence gathered by The Independent reveals that:

- A key investigator in the original botched hunt for the killers was corrupt and engaged in extensive criminal enterprise, according to the secret Met files. Detective Sergeant John Davidson, who interviewed key Lawrence suspects and witnesses within days of the stabbing, was a "major player" in a ring of bent detectives "operating as a professional organised crime syndicate", according to previously unpublished intelligence reports.
- Davidson had corrupt relations with informants, dealt in Class A drugs and "would deal in all aspects of criminality when the opportunities presented themselves", according to the files written by senior anti-corruption officers.
- Davidson is alleged to have admitted that officers had a corrupt relationship with Clifford Norris, the gangster father of murderer David Norris. A police supergrass recently gave evidence under oath at the Old Bailey that Davidson had told him bent cops "looked after old man Norris".
- Anti-corruption officers were aware of the alleged link with Norris during the 1998 Macpherson inquiry, according to new testimony from the former Crown prosecutor on the case, but an internal Met legal memo suggests that the force feared the claim would get out while it was being sued by the Lawrence family.



- John Yates, the former Met Assistant Commissioner who led the investigation into Davidson and his colleagues, can be revealed to have prepared testimony for police corruption proceedings last year, unrelated to Davidson, confirming that “there was a huge appetite to prosecute John Davidson, who we considered then and still do now to have been a major corrupt player of that era”.

Davidson never faced criminal charges and was allowed to retire on ill health grounds to run a bar on the Spanish island of Menorca after prosecutors decided there was a lack of corroborating evidence. The detective denies being corrupt, describing the allegations as “devastating and false”.

These intelligence files and the previously unreported evidence from recent police corruption proceedings raise serious questions for the Met about whether the Macpherson inquiry – which in 1999 found the force to be “institutionally racist” – was shown the full extent of the allegations against Davidson.

Macpherson found that incompetence, rather than corruption, was to blame for the failure to catch any of the killers, and no officer faced serious disciplinary measures over their role in an investigation whose shortcomings provoked a transformation in British policing which many feel is incomplete.

Lingering suspicions remain that extraordinary lapses – such as the two-week delay before any of the suspects were arrested – cannot be put down to mere procedural shortcomings. At least three of Stephen Lawrence’s killers remain at large.

Imran Khan, Doreen Lawrence’s solicitor, said: “Doreen Lawrence said after the verdicts that they had achieved only partial justice and wanted the police to pursue the other individuals who were involved. We want the Metropolitan Police – and those who are in a position to do so – to conduct a full inquiry into the allegations The Independent has raised. If there was corruption, the Metropolitan Police needs to uncover it and deal with it, so that those who were under its influence are now free to do and say what they want to say.”

“We don’t know if there are such witnesses but it still leaves a potential opening. We can’t rely on forensic evidence and we now have to look to other lines of inquiry. This is a legitimate and credible line of inquiry. It’s important for the family that those leads are followed that could result in prosecution of those who are still at large.”

Last night, a member of the Macpherson inquiry’s advisory panel confirmed it had suspected that corruption played a role in the failure of the original police investigation and that not all information available had been handed over by the Met. Dr Richard Stone said: “There was a whole lot we were not told. If this is true, it confirms suspicions we had during the inquiry that seemed very likely with David Norris’s father around.”

## **Inside the Met’s corruption files**

Davidson, a hard-bitten cop who began his career as a constable in Glasgow, arrived at the Lawrence investigation within 36 hours of the stabbing.

He dealt with a key informant who had just identified David Norris and others as suspects for the murder – and whose informant file was lost during the murder investigation. Davidson also arrested and interviewed Gary Dobson and carried out the interview of another suspect, Luke Knight.

In the subsequent Macpherson report into the bungled murder inquiry Davidson was strongly criticised as “self-willed and abrasive” and offering “undoubtedly unsatisfactory” evidence. However the inquiry panel concluded: “We are not convinced that DS Davidson positively tried to thwart the effectiveness of the investigation.”

But files from “Operation Russia” – the investigation by the Met’s anti-corruption unit into bent officers in south London in 1998 – show that detectives believed that John Davidson had long been corrupt, and lend weight to the calls for him to now be questioned.

In 1994, with no one charged with the murder of Stephen Lawrence, Davidson had transferred to the South-East Regional Crime Squad (SerCs) in East Dulwich, London, where corruption with informants was endemic. A group of detectives there was already the target of a secret Met anti-corruption unit known as the Ghost Squad. A new anti-corruption squad was formed in January 1998, CIB3.

Then-Detective Superintendent John Yates, a senior CIB3 officer, targeted Davidson as one of 14 “core nominals” – detectives whose “criminality is extensive and, in essence, amounts to police officers operating as a professional organised crime syndicate”, he explained in the case file.

Yates wrote to his superiors in blunt terms in October that year about the evidence he had found against Davidson: “It is now apparent that during his time at East Dulwich Davidson developed a corrupt informant/handler relationship. Their main commodity was Class A drugs, predominantly cocaine, however, Davidson and his informant would deal in all aspects of criminality when the opportunities presented themselves.”

This eye-wateringly direct assessment was written at one of the most politically perilous moments in the history of the Met. The Macpherson inquiry was about to finish hearing evidence and begin writing its report.

Yates, the future head of Britain’s counter-terrorism policing, seems to have been aware of the wider significance of the evidence he held on Davidson. In a note to senior officers, also written in October 1998, he set out a list of “Difficulties/threats” posed by his investigation into police corruption. One of the “threats” bullet points read: “Lawrence Enquiry [sic] – exposure of ex DS Davidson as a corrupt officer.”

The Met did tell the Macpherson inquiry in September 1998 about Operation Russia’s interest in Davidson, but said the corruption allegations it was investigating had no connection to the Lawrence murder. The Inquiry asked to be kept fully informed about developments. The Met this week declined to say whether it had shared Yates’s October 1998 reports with Sir William Macpherson.

There was one officer however itching to tell Sir William about Davidson – but the Macpherson inquiry would never hear from him.

## **The police supergrass – and his new evidence under oath**

Detective Sergeant Neil Putnam, a colleague of Davidson at East Dulwich and a member of the corrupt cabal, was arrested by Met anti-corruption officers in July 1998, in the middle of the Macpherson inquiry. He immediately agreed to turn “supergrass” against his former comrades.

Putnam said he was “fed up with the lies to cover the lies to cover the lies”.

Over a period of four months between July and October 1998, while Macpherson continued to take evidence at his inquiry, Putnam detailed the scale and nature of the corruption that had consumed the East Dulwich branch of the regional crime squad. This included three specific acts of dishonesty he claimed to have carried out with his sergeant Davidson and an informant they managed together: the disposal of stolen watches, handling stolen electrical equipment, and the theft of cocaine from a drug dealer.

Putnam insists he made another, more serious allegation against Davidson: that Davidson had one day casually admitted to him that he was in a corrupt relationship with Clifford Norris – the drug dealing father of David, who murdered Stephen Lawrence.

Putnam has now expanded on this allegation under oath for the first time, during new corruption proceedings at the Old Bailey against other officers from the same crime squad.

Putnam, a born-again Christian who was jailed for his own corruption offences in 1998, told the court four months ago that when he and Davidson had been alone in the office one Sunday, he had asked Davidson about the Lawrence case.

He said: "We were talking and I turned round and said that I felt that it was obvious that the boys were guilty, so obvious something's wrong. And then John suddenly came out with the fact that he'd been dealing with, his exact words were, 'old man Norris'."

"Now I knew that one of the boys was Norris and old man Norris is the dad. John said that he'd given them information. John wasn't precise as to what the information was and John said they'd looked after him, those were the exact words 'they'd looked after him' and then, that there'd been 'a real little earner out of it' and I knew exactly what he meant by 'a real little earner' and it meant that they'd received cash, received money."

Putnam told the court he had known immediately the implication of what his colleague was telling him: "The person we were talking about was Clifford Norris and no one else." He added that he was troubled by the revelation, saying: "I didn't want to know any more. You didn't push the question, it was the culture we were in."

The supergrass told the Old Bailey that he had provided this information to his CIB3 debriefers in the summer of 1998 and they had written the details down in a notebook. Given that his revelations were being made at the height of the Macpherson hearings, where Davidson had already appeared, Putnam said he had been assured this information would be passed to the inquiry and he would be called to give evidence. The call never came.

Putnam told the court that he believed his evidence was "brushed under the table" because the allegation would "blow apart" the Met.

Asked why he was now giving evidence, he replied: "I said it to the police and they did nothing about it. As far as I'm concerned they hid it away, they didn't want it to come out." Putnam had never given evidence under oath about the Lawrence allegation and risked returning to prison for perjury if he was now lying at the Old Bailey.

The officers in charge of debriefing Putnam also gave evidence under oath and denied he had mentioned corrupt links in the Lawrence case. The Met produced five notebooks, which it said covered the entire period of Putnam's debrief and contained no trace of the claim. Putnam believes at

least 15 notebooks were used to record his evidence and he was “absolutely certain” the Norris claim was recorded, telling the court: “It was written down.”

The Met has admitted mistakes in the way it debriefed the supergrass – specifically that the initial debriefings were not tape-recorded.

Ever since the allegations about Davidson having a corrupt relationship with Clifford Norris became public, Scotland Yard “sources” have tried to downplay Putnam’s credibility as a witness. But senior figures at the Yard in fact privately enthused about Putnam’s credibility, Met documents now show.

Police intelligence files show that John Yates told his superiors categorically in 1998: “Putnam’s value as a witness to the Crown cannot be over-estimated. In spite of his criminality he will present as a credible witness thoroughly contrite about what he has done and the shame that this will bring upon him, his family and the MPS [Metropolitan Police Service]. This has been a consistent thread throughout his debrief.”

The same police intelligence report shows that Yates regarded Putnam as “an unremarkable figure – a follower rather than a leader; a grass eater rather than a meat eater; a man desperate to show he was one of the boys – a trait that led him into a spiral of heavy drinking, debt and thus vulnerable to corruption.”

Putnam’s estranged former wife Gail also gave evidence for the first time, under oath at the Old Bailey, supporting his explosive claims. She told the court that Putnam had confided in her while he was a supergrass that “evidence was withheld for some time because [Davidson] was linked to the father of one of the suspects.” She said she was “incensed” the information had not come out before.

Putnam has aired some of his claims about corruption previously – notably in the controversial 2006 Panorama titled “The Boys Who Killed Stephen Lawrence”, which broadcast claims that the original Lawrence inquiry was tainted by corruption. But his evidence in October was the first time he has put forward the allegations under oath.

Even then, the Met’s position is that its one-time star witness Putnam was not lying but simply “mistaken”. The supergrass, however, has received significant support from an unlikely official source, revealed here for the first time.

### **Crown prosecutor’s testimony on ‘corrupt’ officer**

In July 1998, Martin Polaine was a highly regarded CPS barrister in charge of reviewing the case file on the Lawrence murder when he was recruited to a new hand-picked team of prosecutors with the highest security clearance to analyse the Met’s secret intelligence on corruption.

Polaine was trusted by anti-corruption bosses and put in charge of reviewing evidence obtained by Operation Russia to see if it was capable of being used in prosecutions against officers, including Davidson.

Describing how he had been regularly updated by CIB3 officers about the debriefing of Putnam, the former Crown prosecutor told the Old Bailey at recent corruption proceedings: “I have a recollection I was told by someone in CIB3 of a link between Clifford Norris and Davidson.”



He told the court that when this information was passed to him in late 1998 it was considered “of great significance” and added: “It stuck in my mind ... I recall not being surprised when it was more recently reported that Neil Putnam was speaking of the link.”

Polaine’s evidence raises the question of whether some of the allegations against Davidson were not made public to prevent further damage to Scotland Yard’s reputation at the time of the Macpherson inquiry.

The nightmare scenario for the Met was that Davidson would be found to have thwarted the Lawrence murder investigation. It can now also be revealed that David Hamilton, the Met’s head of legal affairs at the time, submitted a witness statement to the recent police corruption proceedings also recalling that there had been “a suspicion of an association or contact between Davidson and the Norris family”.

This appears to support a legal memo Hamilton wrote in August 2000 outlining the Met’s reluctance to disclose intelligence it held on Davidson – at a time when the force was facing a civil damages claim from the Lawrence family.

Hamilton, then the Met’s most senior lawyer, wrote in 2000: “Disclosures relevant to Davidson’s contact with the Norris family could have an adverse effect on the Commissioner’s position in the ongoing High Court action by Mr and Mrs Lawrence.

“Part of their claim is based on misfeasance in public office and alleges wrongdoing in relation to dealings between police and the Norris family.”

The Lawrences were eventually paid more than £300,000 by the Met in an out-of-court settlement.

When approached by The Independent, Polaine – who was disbarred in 2010 as a barrister for “far-reaching errors” in his advice to a Yates-led anti-corruption inquiry in the Cayman Islands – stood by his evidence in court, and declined to comment further.

Last night, Richard Stone, a member of the Macpherson inquiry, described this latest evidence from Polaine and Hamilton as “very disturbing”.

## Clifford Norris

In 2006, the Lawrence family asked the Independent Police Complaints Commission (IPCC) to investigate Putnam’s claims to Panorama that the Met failed to disclose to the Macpherson inquiry what he had told them of a Davidson-Norris link. The police watchdog said it could not find evidence for Putnam’s Panorama allegations. The IPCC concluded that Polaine, Putnam and Hamilton had confused Clifford Norris with a different crime squad informant coincidentally called David Norris. But the latter Norris had been murdered in 1991, two years before Stephen Lawrence, and all three witnesses insist there was no confusion.

Davidson declined to meet with the IPCC investigators who were looking into the alleged link to Clifford Norris. The former detective could not be reached via his lawyers or the Police Federation to comment on the latest revelations but he has previously issued a statement strongly denying he was guilty of corruption.

Davidson said: “The first and only time I came into contact with Clifford Norris was in 1994 when, whilst leading an arrest team, I arrested him for offences including firearms and drugs. He was

subsequently charged and convicted in relation to these offences. Other than in relation to this arrest, I have had no dealings either directly or indirectly with Clifford Norris.

"I am not corrupt. I did not hamper in any way the investigation into the death of Stephen Lawrence. I am not 'a friend' of, nor did I know, Clifford Norris other than that mentioned above. I would stress the only time I dealt with Clifford Norris was after I had stopped working on the Lawrence investigation."

The former detective also criticised Yates for saying he was corrupt: "I am also very concerned that ... Yates thought it appropriate to condemn me as a corrupt officer."

Clifford Norris meanwhile has denied paying police officers or knowing Davidson. The Macpherson inquiry did hear that a different officer, David Coles, was seen meeting Norris in the late 1980s and receiving a carrier bag containing unknown items. Approached by The Independent recently at his flat above a hardware shop in a seedy area of Ashford, Kent, Clifford Norris said "Fuck off", and slammed the door.

### **A police force 'in denial'**

Scotland Yard now acknowledges that it knew of corruption within Davidson's unit before he was allowed to give evidence to the Macpherson inquiry, and that it subsequently found evidence of Davidson's own corruption – but says it could not find evidence of Davidson having thwarted the Stephen Lawrence murder inquiry.

A spokesman for the Met said: "While there was intelligence of potential corruption within the South East Regional Crime Squad (East Dulwich) no individuals were identified as suspects until Operation Russia began in the spring of 1998. It was not until the arrest of ex-DC Neil Putnam in July 1998 that specific allegations relating to ex-DS John Davidson emerged."

The Met was asked if it had disclosed to Macpherson Yates's belief that Davidson was a key player in a gang of officers "operating as a professional organised crime syndicate".

A Met spokesman replied that the Yard had informed Macpherson of the broader investigation: "We were at a very early stage of the investigation and the allegations were un-corroborated and did not relate to Stephen's murder. However we recognised the significance of Davidson as a witness to the Inquiry and therefore informed them of the investigation."

The Met spokesman added: "Ex-DS John Davidson was subject to an in-depth corruption investigation, during which there was never any evidence of Davidson being involved in corrupt activity within the Stephen Lawrence inquiry or doing anything to thwart that investigation. Had we had such information it would have been determinedly pursued."

"The corruption investigation revealed much intelligence and some evidence of Davidson, and others being involved in corrupt activities, but their actions were unconnected to the investigation into Stephen's death."

"We do not consider that any new or significant information has emerged ... since the IPCC reached their conclusions in 2007. Should any substantive information arise relating to alleged corruption in the original Stephen Lawrence murder investigation it would be seriously considered."

Asked why its own head of legal affairs from 1998, David Hamilton, said in his witness statement to the recent corruption proceedings at the Old Bailey that there had been a "suspicion of an association

or contact between Davidson and the Norris family”, the Met spokesman replied only: “Inquiries by the MPS and the IPCC have found no evidence of a link between ex-DS John Davidson and the Norris family.”

A spokeswoman for the IPCC said: “We are aware of Mr Putnam’s claims and were aware of them during our investigation. We are also aware of Mr Polaine’s comment ... There is nothing which would change our findings or cause us to look into this matter again – they provide no more to substantiate Mr Putnam’s claims than the information we previously had.

“The material in this case is now archived but we have no reason to believe that any Operation Russia material was withheld from the IPCC or the Macpherson inquiry. We were provided with full access to the material. We have no reason to believe that the Macpherson inquiry was not fully aware of allegations involving DS Davidson.”

*“Untouchables” by Michael Gillard and Laurie Flynn will be published this month by Bloomsbury*

## **The Guardian, 16 March 2012 (Vikram Dodd)**

### **Report into Stephen Lawrence officer was not shown to inquiry**

**Met investigation raised questions about Ray Adams’s conduct before case, sources say.**

A secret Scotland Yard report detailing questions about the conduct and integrity of a police chief involved in the Stephen Lawrence case was not given to the public inquiry into the racist killing, the Guardian has learned.

Lawyers for the Lawrence family questioned former commander Ray Adams at the Macpherson inquiry in 1998 about corruption.

But neither the Lawrence family nor the inquiry panel were given a report by Scotland Yard containing the intelligence and findings of an investigation by its anti-corruption command.

The investigation, codenamed Operation Russell, raised questions about Adams’s conduct before the Lawrence case, informed sources say, while finding insufficient evidence to bring criminal charges. Adams insists it exonerates him, and told the Guardian he denies any wrongdoing.

Imran Khan, solicitor for Doreen Lawrence, described the revelations as earth-shattering and said they met the legal standard for the home secretary to order a fresh public inquiry into whether the killers of Stephen Lawrence were shielded by corruption. Richard Stone, a member of the Macpherson inquiry panel, said: “If there had been any sort of documentation, we would have leapt on it. If that had been before us, we would have immediately taken it very seriously and acted on it.”

Stone said the allegations were serious and the inquiry should have been told about the Met’s report. Scotland Yard said it could not establish if the report had been passed to the Macpherson inquiry.

The inquiry into the murder of Stephen Lawrence in 1993 heard of suspicions from the Lawrence family of corruption among a number of officers. The final report found no evidence of corruption, but the Lawrences say this conclusion must now be revisited. The Met’s investigation into Adams began in April 1987, by which time he had risen to become the Met’s head of criminal intelligence, in charge of gathering information about major criminals and criminal networks.

It ended with no criminal or misconduct charges being brought against Adams but lists concerns about him, in one instance describing his conduct as highly questionable and unprofessional.

The investigation was carried out by the Met's complaints investigation bureau and conducted by then deputy assistant commissioner Peter Winship. It was triggered by allegations that Adams had taken bribes from criminals and had improper relationships with criminal informants, which he strenuously denied.

During the investigation a detective close to Adams, Alan Holmes, was found shot dead in July 1987. An inquest found he had killed himself, on the eve of Adams being interviewed by corruption investigators. The Met inquiry found Holmes had met Adams during the corruption inquiry and was believed to have passed him details of the allegations and of the investigation's progress.

Some of the allegations against Adams centred on his relationship with Kenneth Noye, a major criminal and police informant. Noye was acquitted of murdering a police officer in 1985, but later convicted of a road rage killing.

One senior police source told the Guardian: "Adams's name came up again and again. The Met never did nail him. It's always embarrassing, especially when somebody is at commander level."

A second report was also not passed to the Macpherson inquiry. Operation Othona was a secret four-year investigation into corruption in the Met ordered by the then commissioner, Paul Condon, in 1993. Part of it featured intelligence and allegations about Adams's conduct, a senior source said, "but not the evidence to take to court".

At the Macpherson inquiry the Lawrence lawyers claimed Noye had a criminal associate, Clifford Norris, whose son, David Norris, was a prime suspect in the murder. David Norris was finally convicted in January 2012 of the murder.

Documents seen by the Guardian show that weeks after the murder, Clifford Norris returned to the Eltham area, despite being on the run, such was his concern about his son. A witness says Norris was confident the police would not arrest him, bragging "he was putting his face up front and nothing was happening".

At the Macpherson inquiry, allegations were also made against a key detective on the first investigation to Lawrence's murder, Detective Sergeant John Davidson. The Guardian has learned that Holmes, a close colleague of Adams, was close friends with Davidson and had partnered with him. On his final day alive Holmes spent most of his time in the company of Davidson, who has denied allegations he was corrupt in the Lawrence murder investigation or during his policing career.

Questions about Davidson's involvement with Norris were first raised in a Guardian article in 2002, with the same allegations being made by the BBC in 2006, and a third news organisation a fortnight ago. Holmes had been interviewed by anti-corruption officers, and was upset by the experience. He was allowed to work on the Met's serious crime command, despite officers knowing he was in a relationship with the wife of a suspected criminal.

Adams retired from the Met in 1993 because of a painful back problem. He later got a job as head of security at NDS, a company controlled by Rupert Murdoch's News Corporation.

On the face of it, Adams was only peripherally involved in the liaison between the police and the Lawrence family during the early stages of the investigation, intervening a week after the murder to

sign a letter. But the family had suspicions, detailed in Macpherson's report, which refers to "a notice of allegations and issues" delivered to Adams by the Lawrence legal team, which says: "A potential channel for such influence arises from Commander Adams's previous links with Kenneth Noye who in turn has links with Clifford Norris."

Adams told the Guardian that Operation Russell and the Macpherson inquiry had both exonerated him. Of the Met investigation he said: "The head of the investigation shook my hand at the end of it and said 'you are the only person who's probably told the whole truth'. I only signed a letter, for that I get hammered in the [Macpherson] inquiry, with no supporting evidence at all, not one shred. There is no connection between [Operation] Russell and [the] Macpherson [inquiry]."

Doreen Lawrence said: "I am shocked and appalled by the revelations. Not only must a new public inquiry look at whether corruption existed in the police investigation, but why it was that such critical information was kept from us – Stephen's family. We had a right to know."

The Met said it could not establish if details of Operations Russell and Othona had been passed to Macpherson: "Should any new information arise relating to alleged corruption in the original Stephen Lawrence murder investigation it would be seriously considered."

*This article was amended on 22 March 2012. The original said that questions about Davidson's integrity were first raised in a Guardian article in 2002. This has been corrected.*



## **Appendix I0: Metropolitan Police Service Review (published version), 31 May 2012**



**31 May 2012**

### **Metropolitan Police Service**

#### **Review into whether relevant material concerning corruption allegations was passed to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry**

In March 2012 allegations appeared in the media suggesting there was new evidence of corruption in relation to the original investigation into the murder of Stephen Lawrence and secondly, that the Metropolitan Police Service (MPS) failed to disclose key documents in relation to corruption within the service to the subsequent Stephen Lawrence Inquiry. This report, prepared by the MPS Directorate of Professional Standards and overseen by the Deputy Commissioner, summarises the MPS review into those allegations and details our findings.



## **Metropolitan Police Service**

### **Review into whether relevant material concerning corruption allegations was passed to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry**

#### **Introduction**

The purpose of this report is to explain what action the Metropolitan Police Service (MPS) took, as well as our findings, following recent allegations and speculation in the media that the MPS withheld relevant information regarding police corruption at the time of the public Inquiry into the murder of Stephen Lawrence.

Allegations of corruption affecting these enquiries have been made over the years by various interested parties. These include Stephen Lawrence's family, their legal representatives, members of the press and others researching material for literary works.

It is important to note that this review of the material does not represent a re-investigation into the allegations of corruption nor of those officers subject of those allegations. A considerable amount of material has been viewed by officers from the Directorate of Professional Standards (DPS) in order to ascertain whether relevant information was disclosed at the time to the Inquiry.

#### **Methodology**

Over the years the various investigations and inquiries, both criminal and civil, have generated many thousands of documents. These range from those prepared during the original and subsequent investigations as well as civil litigation. All available files relating to these matters have been reviewed.

Specifically officers have reviewed the Operation Russell file, the Operation Russia file and a significant amount of material representing several thousands of documents which have been compiled by the MPS Directorate of Legal Services. We have also scoped material within the government archives in Kew where publicly accessible material has been archived.

The DPS has spoken to numerous officers, both serving and retired, regarding the original investigation and subsequent Inquiry. These include retired Deputy Assistant Commissioner John Grieve and retired Deputy Assistant Commissioner Roy Clarke, both involved in anti corruption operations in the 1980s.



Despite the MPS making requests to the Independent, Evening Standard and Guardian newspapers, they have declined to produce any alleged new evidence or other material in support of the various claims made.

## **Commander Ray Adams**

### **Operation Russell**

Commander Ray Adams was subject of two corruption investigations during his service which ran under the name of Operation Russell.

Operation Russell was supervised by the Police Complaints Authority (PCA, forerunner of the Independent Police Complaints Commission) and ran from May 1987 to February 1989. None of the allegations against Adams were substantiated and no action was taken against him.

There is no evidence to indicate that Commander Adams had any involvement or was able to apply adverse influence in the initial investigation into the murder of Stephen Lawrence.

Commander Adams initially appeared on day 38 of the Inquiry when his evidence was adjourned for the purpose of the production and review of relevant material from Operation Russell. He returned to the witness box on day 54.

During this interval information was disclosed to the Inquiry. More detail on this appears in this report under 'Disclosure to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry'.

## **Detective Sergeant John Davidson**

### **Operation Russia**

Operation Russia was an anti corruption investigation into a cell of corrupt officers within the Regional Crime Squad (RCS) office at East Dulwich.

The operation began in April 1998 following intelligence offered by a then resident informant Eve Fleckney. In July 1998 DC Neil Putnam was arrested for corruption and he to became a resident informant giving evidence of corruption against other RCS officers.



Issues relating to DS John Davidson only arose late in 1998 after he had attended the Inquiry and given his evidence. Those issues were not related to the Stephen Lawrence murder investigation and involved his relationship with a number of known criminals.

Putnam initially implicated DS John Davidson in a number of matters none of which were related to the Stephen Lawrence murder investigation. Those allegations relating to Davidson in Operation Russia were investigated but could not be substantiated.

In 2006 Neil Putnam was interviewed by Mark Daly, a BBC journalist for the programme 'The boys who killed Stephen Lawrence'. During this interview Putnam makes allegations that he told his de-brief officers that Davidson had looked after the interest of Clifford Norris' son David during the initial Stephen Lawrence murder investigation and implied that he had received payment using the words 'he's a good little earner'.

On 26th July 2006 the BBC aired 'The boys who killed Stephen Lawrence'. An official complaint followed from Doreen and Neville Lawrence's solicitor which resulted in an IPCC investigation.

### **IPCC Investigation**

The IPCC Investigation centred on 3 areas of complaint:

1. Allegations those officers who had de-briefed Putnam had failed to record or act upon information he had given them concerning allegations of corruption in the original Stephen Lawrence murder investigation.

The IPCC concluded that there is no corroborative evidence to support the allegation that Putnam told any MPS officer of a corrupt link between Clifford Norris and John Davidson or of any specific corruption involving the Stephen Lawrence murder investigation and were of the view that the allegation was not substantiated.

2. The MPS had failed to advise the Stephen Lawrence enquiry of concerns regarding a witness, DS John Davidson.

The IPCC concluded that there was no evidence to suggest that the Metropolitan Police withheld information concerning the integrity of Davidson from the



Stephen Lawrence Enquiry. In fact it is clear from the correspondence obtained during the investigation that the MPS ensured Lord Macpherson was aware of the emerging facts concerning the allegations around Davidson.

3. The allegation of corruption involving Davidson and Clifford Norris the father of one of the suspects implicated in the murder of Stephen Lawrence.

The IPCC concluded that they were not able to establish a 'link' between Clifford Norris and John Davidson or any corruption in the original Stephen Lawrence murder investigation.

Neil Putnam has not to date been re interviewed or questioned further regarding alleged historic conversation between him and Davidson and alleged association with the Norris family. This matter was specifically dealt with in the subsequent IPCC investigation.

### **David Norris (Deceased)**

David Norris (deceased) was a long time police informant during the 1980s. During some of this time Commander Ray Adams was employed as No 9 RCS Coordinator. In this role he would have had 'distant oversight' of Norris the informant. There is no suggestion of any personal relationship between the two. Davidson had at one time handled Norris the informant, and clearly they were well known to each other. This David Norris has been the root of some confusion over the years and this issue was itself explored during the Inquiry. There is no evidence of any connection either familial or by association between David Norris the informant and Clifford Norris (father of the now convicted David Norris) or of any other member of that family.

David Norris was the victim of a contract killing outside his home on 29th April 1991, prior to Stephen's murder.

### **Officer XX**

Officer XX (as he was known at the Inquiry) was subject of one discipline investigation during his service. In October 1987 he was observed during a Her Majesty's Customs and Excise (HMCE) operation to meet with and exchange packages with the then suspect drugs importer Clifford Norris, father of the now





convicted David Norris. This resulted in a discipline hearing for making false entries on duty states, being away from a place of duty and other related misconduct. Officer XX was required to resign, which following appeal was changed to a reduction in rank with restrictions upon his future operational deployment.

Officer XX had no connection with the initial investigation into the murder of Stephen Lawrence. He was not called to give evidence during the Inquiry. Whilst not a member of the investigation team he was utilised on 22 April 1996 as an escort for Duwayne Brookes at the Central Criminal Court. This was during the period of the second investigation.

The MPS has previously expressed our regret for the use of Officer XX for this purpose and had the previous relationship with the Norris family been known to those arranging the escort, then he would certainly not have been used. The Inquiry set out the concerns regarding the association of Officer XX and Clifford Norris. Officer XX's minimal role (as above) extended only to the second investigation where there have been no allegations of collusion or corruption.

Officer XX did not give evidence personally at the Inquiry. The Inquiry did accept evidence of the clear connection between Officer XX and Clifford Norris (father of the now convicted David Norris) based on the previous investigation following the HMCE operation. The Inquiry examined the officer's personnel and discipline file and accepted that his role in the second investigation was so remote and inconsequential that it was not of concern.

### **Disclosure to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry**

On 16<sup>th</sup> March 2012 the MPS Directorate of Media and Communications (DMC) received notice that the Guardian Newspaper was intending to run an article claiming the MPS did not disclose relevant information to the Inquiry, particularly the contents of Operation Russell and Operation Othona. These concerned Ray Adams and other officers involved in the Lawrence investigation or Inquiry, in particular DS John Davidson, Officer XX and the 'Putnam allegations'. Our analysis of the documents has identified the following:

The MPS made known to the Inquiry that there had been concerns regarding the integrity of both Adams and Davidson and the MPS held intelligence and files documenting that. Lord Macpherson tasked his leading counsel Edmund Lawson QC (now deceased) to review the material.



On 12th June 1998 the then Deputy Commissioner, Sir John Stevens, sent a letter to the Secretary of the Inquiry stating that no police officer who had been called or was due to give evidence in the Inquiry was under investigation at that time.

During the interval before Commander Adams was re-called, Jason Beer QC (then Junior Counsel for the MPS and recently spoken to for the purpose of this review) recalls that he and Lawson met in Chambers and the files concerning Adams and Davidson were disclosed. Jason Beer recalls the large number of files and circumstances of the allegations and how they were made. Beer recollects that the Inquiry was interested in the three individuals Adams, Davidson and an officer known to the Inquiry as Officer XX. A decision was made to identify and disclose to the Inquiry all past investigations, discipline records and any other intelligence relevant to possible corruption in relation to the three. These files included the Operation Russell investigation.

Searches were made at the MPS File Repository known as General Registry in order to identify relevant documents. These same searches have been conducted recently and clearly reveal the existence of the previous investigations in relation to Adams, Davidson and Officer XX, as well as their production in 1998 to be provided to the Inquiry.

Following the review of the papers held, Edmund Lawson QC came to the conclusion that the material was not relevant and it would not need to be openly disclosed or subject to PII consideration. It was this material that Lord Macpherson referenced in his closing remarks to the Inquiry when he refers to confidential material that has been viewed but was not relevant.

On 25th June 1998 Mr Stephen Wells, Secretary to the Inquiry, wrote to all interested parties. In his letter he clearly makes reference to the material disclosed as that of Operation Russell and other misconduct files and other documents relating to Commander Adams. He confirms in his letter that the material was not considered relevant to the Inquiry.

Mr Lawson addressed the enquiry:

*"If anything should come to our notice to suggest that there was any connection between Clifford Norris and any police officer, we would procure that that information was disclosed. Thus far, it has not come to our notice, despite our looking at a great many documents, but if it had, it would be disclosed." (Mr Lawson TR/p.5607-5608)*



The Chairman offered his own assurances in relation to various confidential intelligence files:

*“These documents have been very carefully sifted by counsel and will be looked at by me and I can simply give everyone this assurance: that if there is any relevant to the case being put forward by Mr and Mrs Lawrence in respect of corruption or in respect of collusion or in respect of the influence of Clifford Norris, then of course it will be revealed” ( Chairman TR/p.5609-5610)*

On 17th July 1998 Mr Peter Whitehurst (Solicitor to the Inquiry) wrote to the MPS confirming that the Chairman has considered investigation files in relation to Davidson and commented on the decisions allowing the officer to resign prior to its conclusion.

On 23rd July 1998 further correspondence from the MPS to Mr Whitehurst confirmed that the Inquiry was still considering the files relating to DS Davidson.

On 11th September 1998 the Deputy Commissioner wrote to the Secretary of the Inquiry to say that a new line of enquiry regarding corruption had opened (Operation Russia). This line of enquiry implicated John Davidson (Davidson had already given evidence to the enquiry in April and July 98). The letter also stated that the information relating to Davidson and corruption did not relate to the Lawrence investigation.

Operation Rome (the retrial of Clarke and Drury) provided all relevant material to the CPS for the recent Lawrence murder trial and it is of note that Mark Ellison QC was lead counsel for both matters.

## **Operation Othona**

Commissioned in 1993 by the then Commissioner Paul Condon, Operation Othona was a covert intelligence gathering operation established to understand the corruption picture within the MPS. It provided the first strategic threat assessment of corruption within the MPS.

Whilst given an operation name, this was an intelligence gathering process. That intelligence would be reviewed, developed and a decision made as to the most appropriate way to respond to it.

The operation led to the formation of Complaints Investigation Bureau (CIB3) Ghost Squad and the modern DPS Anti-Corruption Command. Much of the work of Operation Othona did not find its way onto mainstream MPS intelligence



systems and whilst its findings undoubtedly led to numerous proactive operations over the years it is difficult to identify those operations retrospectively as stringent safeguards were put in place to maintain their secrecy and sterile corridors established to protect the extensive covert assets.

Retired DAC Clarke has been spoken to and can confirm the nature of the operation. Any files generated under the operation name concerned only finances and administration issues and not subjects.

## **Conclusions**

- There have consistently been three officers of concern relating to the murder investigation of Stephen Lawrence, the subsequent review and Inquiry. The officers Adams, Davidson and Officer XX have been subject to much speculation. No subsequent investigations nor review nor the Public Inquiry have uncovered evidence of corruption or collusion which could have adversely affected or otherwise influenced the path of the original investigation or subsequent investigations.
- The MPS disclosed all material in relation to adverse information held regarding the three officers of concern. The Adams material was reviewed by Counsel for the Inquiry who reported to Lord Macpherson. When Davidson became of interest to Operation Russia, the Inquiry was further updated of these concerns and material was disclosed to them. Davidson had by this time given his evidence.
- There is no other material known to be held by the MPS which suggests that corruption or collusion in any way impacted upon the initial investigation in the murder of Stephen Lawrence.
- There are no new allegations arising from the recent media coverage. Allegations or suggestions made to date have already been investigated by the MPS and the IPCC.

**David Hurley**  
**A/Detective Superintendent**  
**Head of Intelligence**  
**Directorate of Professional Standards**  
**31 May 2012**





## **Appendix I I: Additional material relating to Neil Putnam**

### **How Neil Putnam came to be debriefed in 1998**

1. Neil Putnam is a former Detective Constable of the South East Regional Crime Squad (SERCS). He worked alongside John Davidson in 1994.
2. In the main report we have considered the corruption problem that faced the Metropolitan Police in the 1990s, and led to the formation of Operation Othona. In December 1997, as the terms and scope of the Public Inquiry into the death of Stephen Lawrence were being finalised, the former Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police Service, Sir (now Lord) Paul Condon, appeared before the Home Affairs Committee and described a significant existing corruption problem.
3. This public comment coincided with the investigation of corruption within the Metropolitan Police being investigated more overtly. CIB3 emerged in January 1998.
4. One of its first investigations was named 'Operation Russia'. A convicted drug dealer, Evelyn Fleckney, began to give information about her dealings with a number of corrupt officers based in SERCS at East Dulwich. Fleckney was debriefed by a team within CIB3, and her allegations were investigated. The investigation led officers to search the home address of Neil Putnam, who was then a Detective Constable in SERCS, on 6 July 1998. Putnam was not arrested but he was told that he was under investigation for corrupt activities and he was suspended from duty.
5. On 13 July 1998, Neil Putnam contacted officers from CIB3 and confessed to two acts of corruption, which he said had involved other SERCS officers. He was charged with the offences and remanded into custody. Later the same day, Putnam was produced from custody and questioned in a debriefing exercise which lasted until October 1998. He confessed to many other offences and implicated a number of other officers, including Robert Clark, Christopher Drury, "Officer K", "Officer R", O'Connell and, significantly for the purposes of this Review, John Davidson.
6. In October 1998, Neil Putnam pleaded guilty to 16 offences, occurring between 1991 and 1997. His sentence was adjourned until after he had given evidence in the trial of Robert Clark and Christopher Drury.
7. Neil Putnam gave evidence on two occasions: firstly, in the trial of Clark and Drury, and then again in the trial of "Officer K", "Officer R" and O'Connell. In the first trial, his evidence sat alongside that of Evelyn Fleckney, the convicted drug dealer who was also giving evidence against former police officers. In the second trial, Neil Putnam's evidence was the key evidence in the case against the three defendants.
8. In February 2000, in between the two trials, he was sentenced to three years and 11 months' imprisonment. On 24 April 2000, he was released on licence subject to a Home Detention Curfew.

### **Neil Putnam's allegations in 2006**

9. In a television documentary recorded in 2006, 'The Boys Who Killed Stephen Lawrence', Neil Putnam made it clear that in 1994 John Davidson had told him that he had a corrupt relationship with Clifford Norris, the father of David Norris, at the time of Stephen Lawrence's murder. Further, Neil Putnam stated that he had told his debriefing officers about this at the time of his debrief in 1998.

10. If correct, this would suggest the following:

- i) John Davidson had made an admission to a corrupt link to Clifford Norris.
- ii) That there had been an effort by someone in the Metropolitan Police to prevent this allegation from emerging into the public domain.

In the context of our terms of reference, both of the above propositions are of obvious significance.

11. Our main report summarises the arguments in support of and against Neil Putnam's allegations. In this appendix, we have set out some of the supplemental material relevant to these arguments.

12. We have divided the material into the following sections:

- A. What Neil Putnam told the police in 1998 about the alleged corrupt practices of John Davidson, as recorded in the police records
- B. What Neil Putnam told the journalist Graeme McLagan in 2000 about John Davidson
- C. Graeme McLagan's relationship with the Metropolitan Police Service
- D. What Neil Putnam told the journalist Vikram Dodd in 2002 about John Davidson
- E. What Neil Putnam told the journalist Mark Daly in 2006 about John Davidson
- F. The Independent Police Complaints Commission's conclusions in 2006
- G. What Neil Putnam said about this issue during the course of the retrial of *R v Clark and Drury* in 2011
- H. Other material relevant to this issue

## **A. What Neil Putnam told the police in 1998 about the alleged corrupt practices of John Davidson, as recorded in police records**

In this section we have set out the recorded accounts given by Neil Putnam in 1998, both in the notes of the debrief and in his statements.

### **From the typed copy of the Debrief Notes**

**28 July 1998:**

Dover Police Station  
Officers: DC Esposito, DS Walsh  
Time commenced: 16.03  
"Informant 1"

Early December 1994 John Davidson came into office stating "Informant 1" had been in touch stating there was going to be a lorry hi-jack of Freemans Catalogue parcel order. Location M25 junction with A217 @ Redhill turnoff.

Everyone scrambled, myself and Peter Lawrence got early message to go to the venue and carry out a recce. Nothing happened, stood down at about 16.00hrs.

Overnight information to Dulwich RCS office that a Freemans lorry driver had been kidnapped. This matter was being investigated at Walworth Road Pol. Stn.

Davidson spoke to OIC, a detective sergeant who apparently was not happy with his story.

Later phone call from "Informant I" to Davidson that the team had had the lorry off. The driver was in on the job. "Informant I" had apparently been offered the entire consignment. "Informant I" was not interested but suggested he would view the consignment so that Davidson could be informed. The subject that had relayed this information to "Informant I" was called "AA". The next day we plotted up "AA's" H/A. Davidson apparently knew him from his days at Penge. Surveillance carried out on "AA" followed to Camberwell

... [describes the surveillance operation]...

I went to garage with Roger Pearce where male carrying box was seen to enter. Found Freemans box containing stereo cassette player.

Questioned subjects denied he had keys to target premises... Persons arrested for handling – cursory search – found items of property in a cupboard. Within 20 minutes Davidson returned having followed informant away. Davidson asked me to be exhibit officer. I also arrested subject and took him back to Walworth. OIC of the original hi-jacking suggested the job be transferred in its entirety to Walworth CID. Upon returning to the target venue I found that the sacks containing the property had been opened. "TK" from Freemans was present in addition to man from Riders who had arrived from Chatham depot. Davidson informed me that all the property should be restored to Freemans for a stock check then photographs. I asked Davidson why all the property was in disarray. Davidson inferred the property had to be checked.

"Officer H", "Officer Br" and possibly "Officer R" assisted me to put the property back into sacks sealed with MPS exhibit labels.

Property returned to Freemans premises believed. Keys handed to DS at Walworth Road.

Several days later Davidson suggested to go out for an Indian meal in the East End. I suggested to meet in Hollands. Usual meeting venue, near Arbour Sq. In fact, we met near Aldgate, a grotty pub.

Davidson already in P.H. when I got there. With either "Officer C" or "Officer R". Davidson said we're not eating, we've got other things to do. I was annoyed at this, I felt they could have pre-warned me.

Davidson handed me £40 or £50. I asked what it was for. Davidson replied "Look at it as a Sergeants Christmas box". He added that as much electrical goods were separated from the lorry job and these items were given to "Informant I". I took the money. I had a quick drink and left. Money was in ten pound denominations.

Those arrested were subsequently acquitted at court. PII application invariably a great deal of evidence omitted from trial. Jury believed defence given by a man who owned the American Spray Co.

I believe that there was a payout from Freemans to "Informant I" due to the substantial recovery.

### 3 August 1998:

Interviewing officers: DC Hibberd, DC Esposito  
1.32pm

'John Davidson (O.J.) was sponsored by DI Ken Holmes, and John came on the RCS during the summer of 1994. Had another DS come on at a similar time but he retired and took an ill-health. John D had quite an influence on the team due to experience/confidence/efficiency. He typified what a DS should be like. He had an air of authority that people like Steve Crosby didn't have. John hadn't been on team long (one month) when we did the smash and grab job we discussed. "Informant I" and the watches. We were sharing a car as he lived fairly near to me. We used to go for a drink together sometimes after work. "He's amazing "Informant I", he can get rid of anything for you." At the end of what he said it was like "Do you know what I mean?" It was understood by me to be that anything we came across on the squad "Informant I" could get rid of it. Their relationship had gone back years, and I understood that such transactions had occurred in the past. Other people in John's police 'cliché' also used "Informant I" as an informant, namely "Officer B", "Officer R2". But I can't say that they used him for corrupt purposes.

'I built up quite a good friendship with him. I played for the vets team he was managing. During the time I was there "Informant I" put up the Freemans job/cocaine job/plus info re Eugene Carter (South London) that was passed over to the other team at Dulwich. "Informant I" was well respected in the criminal fraternity. I recall that John said he was known as an informant in criminal circles, but that they all informed at different times. By time of cocaine job I was sharing with "Officer L" and Davidson was with "Officer C" and "Officer R" as they played golf. Although he was known as O.J. I never found him obnoxious. He was a nice guy.

'Technically he finished his time on the RCS, however, he had been suspended in September, or before October 1995 for involvement in the Reg Grundy affair. Went around to see him in the summer. Said that they were never to do it in police time. They were to do it in job time...

"Officer R" became co-handler of "Informant I" in the end. "Informant I" got shot in late 95/96. I'd gone on leave. Messages came through and "Informant I's" wife had asked John and "Officer R" to see him in hospital. He was on bail and so permission was refused. "Officer R" went to hospital and there was a scuffle in the hospital between "Officer R" and uniformed officers and Duty Officer. "Officer R" was suspended for failing to obey a lawful order.'

### 7 August 1998:

Dover Police Station  
Interviewing officer: DC Hibberd  
11.20am

'I have been asked about who was present on the Cudworth job and I recall it was Clark, Drury, "Officer R", "Officer K", John Davidson (O.J.) and some others. "Officer R" told me some time after I came back from leave (possibly a few weeks) that something strange went on and Clark and Drury did the stop on Cudworth and sent everyone else away. He said he stayed for a little while and watched them. They were near the boot of a car talking to Cudworth. Then he went off. The conversation between "Officer R" and I continued and "Officer R" said he didn't trust Clark at all because at one time Bob Clark had given John Davidson some cannabis to get rid of via "Informant I". Clark had apparently kept this cannabis in his garage and Clark had caused Davidson embarrassment on the cannabis was rubbish. O.J. was angry about it. I've got a feeling that some of the cannabis from the Cudworth job may have been given to O.J. to make up for this earlier incident.'

**18 August 1998:**

Interviewing officer: DS Walsh  
1.13pm

In discussing "Officer S": "... He had served on nearly every squad in the Met. At the time of the murder of David Norris the supergrass "Officer S" was very worried, as he seemed upset. ... I believe at some time he was handling Norris. I remember a drink up at one time after the death of Norris that "Officer Br" raised his pint glass and said "Here's to David Norris, he will be missed". I got the impression that they might have been making some money out of him.'

**Neil Putnam's statements in 1998**

In a statement made by Neil Putnam dated 22 September 1998 he described the hijack of the Freemans lorry in December 1994. He said that the information came from "Informant 1" which was passed to Davidson. He and "Officer L" went to investigate possible locations for the hijack. They were subsequently joined by Davidson. They were later told to stand down and Davidson indicated that the hijack had happened in a different area. They were to follow the suspect to the lorry load and the informant. He was handed £40/£50 by Davidson who said that they had taken electrical equipment from the Freemans load. They took items which "Informant 1" was interested in and could sell.

In a statement made by Neil Putnam dated 2 October 1998 he described an allegation relating to stolen watches in August 1994. He was asked to take a box of Omega watches back to Chigwell Police Station after a police sting operation. He took two watches from the box. He was working with Davidson on the August bank holiday Monday. During conversation with him Davidson mentioned that he had a registered source who went by the pseudonym of "Informant 1", who he referred to as a 'good villain' who had the ability to sell on any commodity. Putnam told Davidson that he had two watches to sell. Davidson said that it would not be a problem for "Informant 1" to get rid of them for him. They met with "Informant 1" later that day in a pub on Eltham High Street and negotiated terms. The next day they met again and "Informant 1" gave them £150. He then gave Davidson £75.

In a statement made by Neil Putnam dated 14 September 1998 he described Davidson's involvement in a cocaine deal in April/May 1995. Information was passed to Davidson from "Informant 1" about a cocaine deal. Putnam was deployed as part of the surveillance team. They observed the drug deal and then went in for a raid. Davidson allowed the male seller to leave, suggesting that the search of the vehicle had been negative. Then he saw Davidson take a white carrier bag from the car containing a brick shaped object. The next day he was paged to meet Davidson at a pub in Beckenham. Davidson handed him a plastic bag and told him to search through it and look for his share in there. The bag was full of white envelopes – about eight or nine. He took one with the name 'Neil' written on it. Davidson then explained that the cocaine had not been as profitable as he had hoped it would be. The envelope contained £500.

**The decision not to prosecute John Davidson based on Neil Putnam's account**

The three allegations set out in Putnam's statements were investigated by CIB3. It is clear that there was some documentation which corroborated the fact that events of this type had happened on the dates and occasions identified by Neil Putnam. However, the only evidence that corrupt activity had taken place was Putnam. Both John Yates, the officer in charge of Operation Russia, and Martin Polaine, the Criminal Prosecution Service (CPS) lawyer advising on the prosecution of officers, have confirmed to our review that a decision was taken that Neil Putnam's account had to be corroborated by independent evidence before a prosecution would be brought.



In respect of John Davidson, a copy of a single page advice on charge has been found. It is undated and the name of the author has been cut off the bottom of the copy provided to us (DI 10 from the Independent Police Complaints Commission (IPCC) files). It reads as follows:

'Operation Russia: Phase IV:  
John Davidson, "Officer C" and "Informant 1"  
Advice

1. I am asked to advise whether there is sufficient evidence to proceed against any/all of the above in relation to:

- i) The watches enquiry (Davidson & "Informant 1")
- ii) The "cocaine in the street" job (all three)
- iii) The "Freeman's enquiry" (Davidson and "Informant 1")

2. The watches enquiry: In effect the only evidence is the uncorroborated account from Putnam. The reported burglary at "Informant 1's" address gives rise to suspicion, but nothing more bearing in mind the lapse of time and the limited detail available from the jeweller. There is not a realistic prospect of conviction against each suspect on the present evidence.

3. The "cocaine in the street" job: Both in relation to [text missing] taking of the cocaine by Davidson and the subsequent corrupt payment to Putnam, the only evidence capable of being called [text missing] that of Putnam himself. Although "Informant 2" has been seen [text missing] officers and gives an account which largely tallies with Putnam's, he is unwilling to assist any further. In the absence of supporting/corroborative evidence, there [text missing] insufficient to proceed to prosecution.

4. The "Freeman's enquiry": Putnam alleges that Davidson gave him £40–£50, representing the proceeds from the electrical goods sold on by "Informant 1". There is, however, nothing to corroborate the allegedly corrupt payment. In relation to the theft from the lorry itself we can show the "Informant 1" was granted "P.I." status to view the lorry load and that someone called "Peter" tied up Griffiths, the driver, who [text missing] unwilling to make further identification. However, we have at present, nothing more. Accordingly, it is my view that there is insufficient to proceed against either Davidson or "Informant 1".

5. In conclusion, all of the above matters fall short of the corroboration requirement. However, if additional evidence becomes available, please re-submit for further advice'.

### Comment

1. The extent of the allegations made by Neil Putnam against John Davidson, **as recorded in the police records**, do not contain the following:

- i) Any reference to Clifford Norris.
- ii) Any reference to the Stephen Lawrence case.

2. Neil Putnam did comment on David Norris (deceased) and was clear that this person had died before he had joined SERCS.

3. We have not seen anything to suggest that Neil Putnam was ever asked about whether John Davidson had ever mentioned corruption activity to him in the context of the Stephen Lawrence case. We have commented on this in our main report.

## **B. What Neil Putnam told the journalist Graeme McLagan in 2000 about John Davidson**

In 2000, after Neil Putnam had been released from his prison sentence, he was interviewed by a BBC journalist, Graeme McLagan. McLagan had made previous documentaries about police corruption and had been present during the course of the Operation Russia trials. We have sought to speak to Mr McLagan during the course of this Review. After some initial contact, Mr McLagan did not respond to our written requests for a meeting.

Neil Putnam was interviewed at length by Mr McLagan. We have obtained what we understand to be the unedited transcripts. We have not, at the time of writing, been able to obtain the unedited footage of this interview. The programme 'Bent Coppers' was broadcast in October 2000, and was followed by publication of a book in the same name.

**The following are extracts from the full interview of Neil Putnam:**

NP: When he came to work for CID "... if you wanted to succeed or get further, if you wanted anything you had to pay for it... It wasn't sort of done as overt corruption or things like that, but it was petty minor things that might happen in the office". The Regional Crime Squad was 'fragmented, disorderly, lack of discipline'. On his first day he was told that there was a means of earning money corruptly.

[05:22:35]

Qu: There was another informant called Dave Norris who was murdered just before you joined the Regional Crime Squad. What did you learn of him and his importance?

NP: Well I knew that when I first joined the Squad that he was spoken of quite a lot... everything, the work that they did, everything used to come from David Norris, and there was an awful lot of work generated... And I firmly believe that when that man was alive there were corrupt practices going on around him... I think it was recycling drugs, maybe recycling a lot of stolen property. It could be a number of things... But that's about as far as I know because I didn't ask the questions... But it was obvious and evident from the way several officers spoke that the good old days when Dave Norris was about are gone... it's difficult for me to be able to talk about that because it was before I was there.

### **Comment**

This reference to David Norris is significant. In due course, it was suggested that Neil Putnam had confused David Norris (deceased) with Clifford Norris. This section reveals that he was clear that David Norris (deceased) had been murdered prior to his arrival at SERCS.

[06:15:34]

Neil Putnam estimated that in his branch of the Regional Crime Squad about 10% of the office were involved in corrupt activity.

[07:32:04]

Putnam described the difference between 'meat eaters' and 'carnivores': "It's meat eaters that are the main players, the main people who were corrupt, it was not an expression I ever heard before but that's what he was referring to, that the grass eaters were people that dallied around beneath the feet of the meat eaters and they were the people who were taking the prize cuts, as it were."

[08:10:21]

Describing the debriefing process Putnam said: "There were three officers from ClB in the main, they would come down each day, that was Saturdays and Sundays as well, and I would tell them what had happened. First of all we'd write everything down in what they called a debrief book, and then another day it would be a taped interview and culminating towards the end of my detention there that everything was transposed onto proper statement forms."

[08:11:02]

Putnam described the two stages of his debrief after John Yates spoke to him and demanded that he was open about all of his offending.

[08:13:01]

In relation to his pension, Putnam said that he was not sure what he was going to get; there was a misunderstanding about whether or not he would get his pension for service over 22 years. He decided to tell the officers everything; he said, "I spent the next two weeks I think it was when I got everything off my chest and cleared up everything."

[08:21:17]

Putnam stated that at one point during his debrief he was visited by the head of the Witness Protection Scheme, Chris Jarratt, who "was asking after my general welfare, and then after a short period of time started talking about Terry O'Connell and basically saying that he couldn't believe that Terry O'Connell was corrupt and that I'd made a mistake... I had already named Terry O'Connell, and that I must have made a mistake, I must be wrong, and that was I absolutely sure that I was right in what I was saying. And I felt that there was a veiled threat in there. There was a veiled threat that he didn't want me to give evidence against Terry O'Connell".

[08:31:04]

Qu: What about others who were involved in the corruption who were never prosecuted; what do you think about the ones that got away?

NP: That one day I think it will catch up with them, somewhere or another. But I don't hold any grudge against them or anything like that. They got away with it because of lack of evidence because of procedural difficulties or whatever. And that's in their favour. There's not a lot really I can say about them. You know, they were fortunate. They were just very, very fortunate.

Qu: You told Complaints Investigation Branch about a Sergeant, that's Sergeant Davidson, who gave you £500 in an envelope for a job; he was never prosecuted. Were you told why?

NP: Yes, I actually asked the question "what's happened to him?" and I was told that it wasn't in the public interest for him to be prosecuted because of his involvement in the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry.

Qu: And what was his involvement with that?

NP: Well he'd been the family liaison officer I understood, and I think that he'd been involved in some sort of corruption that they'd uncovered in that. But they wasn't party to what it was or told, but they said that it wasn't in the public interest, and that was told to me by CIB3 officers.

Qu: In what way could it not to be in the public interest?

NP: Because it would embarrass the Metropolitan Police too much.

Qu: What, to have someone who was involved in the Lawrence Inquiry?

NP: Because of the amount of criticism that the Metropolitan Police have suffered, because of the reports into the investigation, that it would be... If these allegations came out, became public, it would... They said it would be just too much for the Metropolitan Police to bear. It would drag them down.

Qu: Because the Lawrence family have always said that there was corruption, some kind of corruption was involved.

NP: Yes, I've read that, yes.

Qu: ... In that whole case, and he would be evidence that one of the officers involved was...

NP: Oh yes, I mean as far as I was concerned, I mean what happened between myself and Sergeant Davidson happened. I don't know what the allegation was against him on the Lawrence Inquiry, but yes, I mean in my mind Sergeant Davidson was committing acts of corruption with me.

Qu: And do you think there was sufficient evidence there for it to proceed against him?

NP: If they had gone for some corroboration, yes I mean just on my word alone, no. But then that's only fair and right on the rules of evidence, but if they'd had other corroboration then yes, he should have been prosecuted.

Qu: Do you think that that corroboration was there, or could have been there?

NP: It could've been there but I have no idea who they spoke to or anything like that. I was never party to that.

Qu: That he was one person that you specifically asked what had happened to...

NP: Yes, I wanted to know what had happened to him.

Qu: Did you ask that because you suspected there was something...

NP: I'd been told that some of the others had been charged at that time, and I was just sort of marking it off in my mind so I knew what position I was at and what position everybody else was at. And so I asked... Because Davidson hadn't been mentioned for a while.

Qu: And you expected him to be charged, did you?

NP: Yes I did, yes. I expected everybody to be charged.

## Comment

In this interview, Neil Putnam did not mention that John Davidson had told him that he had a corrupt relationship with Clifford Norris and went as far as to say that he was unaware of what the allegations against Davidson were. It is clear, however, that he expressed surprise that Davidson's links to corruption had not been revealed to the Public Inquiry.

### From *Bent Coppers* (the book) published in 2000:

"Putnam joined the SERCS team at East Dulwich just after Norris – their start informer – had been shot dead by contract killers, hired by criminals, who wanted him permanently silenced. Norris was rumoured to have had corrupt relations with the police, confirmed for Putnam when he was told by one of his new colleagues that Norris had been 'a good earner' for the squad. Putnam could tell anticorruption officers little more about Norris, but Fleckney knew plenty about him."

## C. Graeme McLagan's relationship with the Metropolitan Police Service

We have considered what weight should be attached to Neil Putnam's apparent failure to mention his allegation of Davidson's corrupt relationship with Clifford Norris to Graeme McLagan in the documentary in 2000.

It is clear that Graeme McLagan was given extensive access to Metropolitan Police Service (MPS) files after the Operation Russia trials and before his documentary in 2000. We have sought to establish why this level of access was granted, by whom, and whether it was indicative of an inappropriate relationship with the journalist.

From our interview with John Yates:

John Yates:

"I was always interested in corruption and, you know, current affairs. I have known McLagan for some time. He was not a favourite of many people. He was quite a difficult character, quite a thorn in the side of the Met, but, again, a very thorough dogged determined journalist. I have a lot of respect for him, actually. He was always decent to me. He took a great deal of interest in all the corruption cases from the word go, so he was probably as knowledgeable as anybody, to be honest, on the big picture of what was going on and who was relevant to who. We obviously – I say 'we' – the Met obviously cooperated with him in his book..."

"I think that everyone knew he was going to write a book, so I think that it would be John Stevens' decision. Roy Clark might have been the decision maker, but John Stevens would have been... to actually do that level of cooperation on something so public and so sensitive, it would have been..."

MR ELLISON: So he would have been saying "I am writing a book, anyway"?

MR YATES: He might have even been Commissioner territory, to be honest.

MS MORGAN: Yes.

MR YATES: I would have thought.



- MR ELLISON: And somebody would have said, "Well, let's help him out a bit"?
- MR YATES: Yes, well, rather have an informed book than a speculative book.
- MR ELLISON: Yes.
- MR YATES: So he was given access to a lot of material, but it was, like, come into a room, you can read it, you can't take it away, you cannot copy it sort of thing, as I recall.
- MS MORGAN: And that was being facilitated, I think, by DS Hibberd, is that right?
- MR YATES: Well, he might have been doing some of the disclosure and redaction, you know...
- MS MORGAN: Who was one of your officers on Russia.
- MR YATES: Yes.
- MS MORGAN: But he was just assisting getting the material or was he involved in...
- MR YATES: Simply identifying... I think that Neil would have been doing the scrutiny of the material, what is in there, do we need legal advice on whether we can actually – you have got some stuff in there, haven't you? – what we can show this guy and what we cannot show him.
- MR ELLISON: Were you involved in that process? You cannot help us as to the sort of things that would have been – you know, we can't show him that as opposed to, yes, we can show him this?
- MR YATES: I mean, my view...
- MS MORGAN: Were you aware that there was a process, because we know from the documents –
- MR YATES: I know there is a process, but...
- MS MORGAN: – it was being reviewed.
- MR ELLISON: You would not have expected it to have been keys to the cupboard.
- MR YATES: No. But he would go...
- MR ELLISON: If you were not involved, I will have to ask others, but things like the CIBIC database, you know the intelligence database...
- MR YATES: He never saw that.
- MR ELLISON: Quite. The sort of things that he would have been seeing would have been more evidential stuff?
- MR YATES: More stuff that actually would have been – you know, if you sat through every court case, like he did, actually, all the stuff was sort of non-disclosed material.
- MS MORGAN: You have mentioned the training video. And you obviously, yourself, were in the eventual 'Bent Coppers' programme.

- MR YATES: Yes.
- MS MORGAN: Were you aware of any Met input into the format of that programme and how it was presented?
- MR YATES: No, we would not have had. We very rarely get any form of editorial. We never get any editorial control. You sometimes get a preview. So, no, we didn't, as far as I am aware.
- MS MORGAN: As far as you are aware, so, as far as you are aware, there was no editing process based on Met representations?
- MR YATES: McLagan is the one to tell you that, but I can't imagine we would. We never ever...
- MS MORGAN: And it wasn't with you if it was with anyone?
- MR YATES: No. We would never get that sort of – especially with McLagan.
- MS MORGAN: And to understand the training video, that was a separate video or to be used from the same footage, I am sorry, just to be clear?
- MR YATES: I can't remember. I just remember it was a significant coup really to be able to – not parade, but use this officer who had, you know, fallen on difficult times to be able to sort of use to train. It was quite innovative, really, and a jolly good idea.

We have been unable to establish exactly what took place and why Graeme McLagan was granted access to the files in this way. It is clear, however, that in preparing material for Mr McLagan to review there was some concern that disclosure relating to John Davidson might raise further questions about his relationship with Clifford Norris.

In a memorandum dated 14 August 2000, David Hamilton (MPS Solicitor) advised DS Hibberd about the documents requested by Graeme McLagan. In relation to the complaints history of ex-DS John Davidson, Mr Hamilton stated:

"As before this material is confidential and should be treated as such. Additionally, if confidence were to be breached consideration would have to be given to the effect on any on-going trials in this series should any of the contents of the complaints history be leaked.

"Disclosures relevant to DS Davidson's contact with the Norris family could have an adverse effect on the Commissioner's position in the on-going High Court action by Mr and Mrs Lawrence. Part of their claim is based on misfeasance in public office and alleges wrongdoing in relation to dealings between police and the Norris family."

## **D. What Neil Putnam told the journalist Vikram Dodd in 2002 about John Davidson**

Neil Putnam's clearest allegation of a corrupt relationship between John Davidson and Clifford Norris was made in the 2006 documentary 'The Boys Who Killed Stephen Lawrence'. It is clear, however, that this documentary developed the account which Neil Putnam had given to another journalist, Vikram Dodd, in April 2002. The only notes which have been made available to us of this account are those published on *The Guardian* website, as follows:

“A former police officer, Neil Putnam, alleged in a BBC programme on July 26 2006 that the Metropolitan Police covered up testimony that the killers of Stephen Lawrence were shielded by a corrupt detective, John Davidson. Mr Putnam claimed that Mr Davidson had a corrupt relationship with Clifford Norris, a notorious gangster and the father of David Norris, one of those named by locals as responsible for the black teenager’s murder in April 1993 at a bus stop in Eltham, south-east London. Scotland Yard denies covering up crucial information, saying that after his arrest Mr Putnam gave anti-corruption officers information about Mr Davidson being corrupt but did not provide a link with Mr Norris. Mr Davidson, who now runs a bar in Spain, denies any wrongdoing and was never prosecuted for any alleged offence. Mr Putnam himself was convicted of corruption after confessing to offences.”

*The Guardian* spoke to Mr Putnam in February 2001 when he was in a witness protection programme. Here we present audio extracts from the interview.

Clip 1: On alleged corruption in the investigation

“It was just us two on duty and he said ‘Old Man Norris’, I assumed Old Man Norris was Clifford, that ‘he had been putting some work our way’. By that I assumed he was giving information. It was not until later on that I started to realise that there was corruption going on, the whole investigation was blighted by it.”

Clip 2: On alleged links between Clifford Norris and John Davidson

“Clifford Norris was never going to admit to anything; the minute he does that, the boys are in the dock... and he’d be in the dock for perverting the course of justice, so he’s covered that way, everything is deniable. John is not a stupid man, quite the reverse.”

Clip 3: On the police decision not to pursue corruption matters

“I remember the words. It would be too much of an embarrassment for the Metropolitan Police, and it was likely if it came out it could destroy the Metropolitan Police, those were the exact words, destroy the Metropolitan Police.”

The article which was published in *The Guardian* on 30 April 2002 read as follows:

“Faltering corruption inquiry sets back hopes of new charges”

“Scotland Yard’s hopes that it could get the Crown Prosecution Service to bring new charges over the Stephen Lawrence murder; through fresh investigation into police corruption, have foundered because it has so far been unable to find proof supporting allegations against two former detectives...”

“Fresh investigations began 18 months ago after John Davidson, a detective sergeant who played a key role in the first, failed, Lawrence murder inquiry, was named as a partner in crime by a former detective colleague in South-East London. He was accused of selling drugs and helping to divide up the proceeds. Mr Davidson, a burly Scot nicknamed “OJ” - for obnoxious Jock – by his former colleagues, is now running Obama in Spain. In 1998 he was arrested at his London home and it was raided over corruption allegations, that he was released without charge. He had recently retired from the Met, decorated and having served 30 years. He denies all wrong doing...”

“One particularly disturbing feature of the investigation, as the MacPherson enquiry subsequently discovered, was that the drug dealer father of one of the chief suspects, Clifford Norris, was using his connections to try to bribe and threaten witnesses. He was known to have police contact. Mr Norris’

son, David, and other suspects, when eventually arrested, stonewalled their way through interrogations. Mr Davidson has now been named as having corrupt links with a south-east London drug dealer at around the time of these events. Ex-detective constable Neil Putnam has claimed Mr Davidson was one of a group of corrupt local detectives. Mr Putnam said many of his own former colleagues were colluding with informants to steal and re-sell drugs and other goods seized from criminals.

“Five detectives, including Mr Putnam himself, were subsequently convicted and jailed, in one of the Met’s worst scandals of recent years. Mr Davidson denies being involved and he was never charged. The Lawrence’s family solicitor, Imran Khan, says that they were never told of the existence of Mr Putnam’s evidence at the time of the MacPherson enquiry. Mr Khan said: ‘If we had had those statements, we would have recalled Davidson to be re-examined... if we had known about Putnam, it would have affected the whole line of questioning of every officer. There needs to be an independent investigation into corruption in this case.’

“Neil Putnam, a stocky, hard drinking South Londoner, was a detective constable in the now disbanded South East Regional Crime Squad, when he was joined at the end of 1993 at East Dulwich police station by a new sergeant, ‘OJ’ Davidson. ‘OJ’ was fresh from the collapsed Lawrence investigation where he had been in charge of the ‘outside team’ which interviewed witnesses and tried to develop informants in the case.

“It was not long before the two men were playing football together, and visiting each other’s houses. The Scot was invited to the christening of Mr Putnam’s child. Mr Davidson concedes the two men were colleagues, but denies they were friends.

...”

Although others have been convicted on Mr Putnam’s evidence, it was decided that there were insufficient grounds to prosecute Mr Davidson. He denies doing corrupt deals with criminals, and denies knowing Clifford Norris.

Mr Putnam continues to tell a different story. He says Mr Davidson hinted to him he had some prior knowledge of Clifford Norris. “It was just us two on duty and he said ‘Old Man Norris... had been putting some work our way’. By that I assumed, giving information.” Mr Davidson denies saying this.

Mr Grieve’s officers cannot prove one way or another whether Mr Putnam is telling the truth about Mr Davidson’s character. In other cases where he gave evidence in court, corroboration was discovered. Mr Putnam’s claims alone are not sufficient to charge Mr Davidson. Neither Mr Davidson’s informant in the drugs case, nor the drug courier who had allegedly lost his cocaine, proved willing to co-operate. The Grieve team has also been unable to find concrete evidence of any relationship between Clifford Norris and either of the suspected two detectives in the context of the Lawrence case.

In November 2006, Vikram Dodd sent a letter to the IPCC (DI 62) in which he answered questions posed by the investigators in the following way:

“Was there any mention made to me in the interview with Neil Putnam, of corruption associated with the Stephen Lawrence murder investigation?

“All of Neil Putnam’s references to corruption are contained in the published article ‘Stephen Lawrence: Faltering corruption inquiry sets back hopes...’ *The Guardian* 30 April 2002.

“Did Neil Putnam mention John Davidson at all?

“Any mention of Davidson is included in the published article. For example, we quote Neil Putnam saying ‘it was just us two on duty and he said Old Man Norris... has been putting some work our way’. By that I assumed... giving information.

“Was there any mention of any association between John Davidson and Clifford Norris?

“In the article I explain that Neil Putnam asserts that Clifford Norris and John Davidson were linked. The article sets this out as follows:

“The two men split £250 proceeds from a stolen consignment of Omega watches.

“December 1994 – John Davidson gave him £40 or £50 he describes as ‘Sargey’s Christmas box’ – part of the proceeds from the sum of a recovered haul of electrical goods from a hijacked lorry.

“Spring 1995 – after a cocaine dealer was stopped at a Dulwich pub: ‘I saw Davidson take from the car white carrier bags. I could see that there was a brick-shaped object inside. He just turned around and walked away’. The next day he gave Mr Putnam £500 in an envelope, saying it was his share of the proceeds. All of Neil Putnam’s claims in relation to John Davidson and references to him and to Clifford Norris are included in the article.

“Did he ever mention Clifford Norris as being ‘a good earner’?

“No he did not. See... above: any reference he made to me about Clifford Norris is included in the article itself.

“Did he mention David Norris (deceased)?

“He did not mention David Norris: if he had done it would have been included in the article.”

...

“In summary, all of the details you request are dealt with in the article – if there had been more to say, it would have been published.”

## **E. What Neil Putnam told the journalist Mark Daly in 2006 about John Davidson**

We are grateful to the assistance provided to this Review by the journalist Mark Daly. He has explained to us the circumstances in which he came to speak to Neil Putnam in 2006 and the enquiries that he made into the allegations of corruption, which we have summarised in our report.

In the documentary, Neil Putnam said the following about John Davidson:

PUTNAM: “I said that, um, the four suspects had recently been at court that week or something like that. Uh, that’s my recollections of it. Um, I made some comment about them. And John’s literally follow in and, and turned round and said that, uh, one of the boys, uh, Norris, um – John had been, they’d looked after the boy – and the father because the, uh, old man Norris was uh, basically, he was [giving] them the information. Uh, the police information and that, uh, they were looking after the boy for his sake to continue the information coming on because they were getting some



good results. From old man Norris. And also that, uh, John basically turned around and said that, um, they've had some good, really good results off of it"

MD: "So, are you saying that – basically Davidson admitted to you that he was acting corruptly in the Lawrence case?"

PUTNAM: "I would say that John Davidson admitted to me that he was, um, engaged in corrupt practices with the father of the, the son of, of, of the Norris family and that, um, they were doing that for the sake of so-called protection of the informant but, uh, at the cost of justice really"

MD: "The last time I spoke to you, [you] mentioned that [Davidson had] said it had been a good earner."

PUTNAM: "Oh yeah, John had said that his relationship was one that that he'd earned out of, he'd earned out of it. It had been an earner for him. Um, but that was as far as the conversation went."

MD: "Davidson was taking money from Clifford Norris?"

PUTNAM: "Uh, quite possibly, yes."

MD: "In one of Britain's most famous murder cases, you're telling me that a section of the investigating team was corrupt and in the pocket of Clifford Norris, the father of one of the suspects?"

PUTNAM: "From my conversation that I had with John Davidson on that day, I would say that John Davidson was receiving cash from Clifford Norris by his expression that he was getting a nice little earner out of it."

John Yates was asked about the allegations of corruption being made about John Davidson. He said the following: "From all of the evidence that I have seen, all of the intelligence that I have seen, I have no doubt that he (Davidson) was corrupt." Mr Yates stated that Neil Putnam was "a credible witness and a witness of truth", but he denied that Neil Putnam had made the allegation of a corrupt link between John Davidson and Clifford Norris at the time of his debrief.

## **F. The Independent Police Complaints Commission's conclusions in 2006**

Following the broadcast of 'The Boys Who Killed Stephen Lawrence' on 26 July 2006, Mr and Mrs Lawrence made separate complaints to the IPCC against the Metropolitan Police. John Wadham, the Deputy Chair of the IPCC, made a decision that there would be an independent investigation. The relevant parts of the terms of reference of that investigation were as follows:

"I a. To investigate the allegation that ex Detective Sergeant John Davidson had a 'corrupt relationship' with Clifford Norris.

"I b. To investigate whether any such 'corruption' tainted the actions of DS Davidson either directly or indirectly in the first investigation into the murder of Stephen Lawrence.

“2a. To investigate the allegation that ex Detective Constable Neil Putnam provided information to the Metropolitan Police concerning the ‘relationship’ of DS Davidson and Clifford Norris and in particular that:

“No action was taken by the Metropolitan Police in relation to this information.

“The information was not passed to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry.

“2b. To investigate the allegation that the Metropolitan Police despite knowing or strongly suspecting that DS Davidson was ‘corrupt’ misinformed and/or withheld such knowledge/ suspicion from the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry.

“2c. To make recommendations regarding any possible criminal or misconduct culpability revealed.”

The investigation was conducted by a team of investigators from the London and South East region. Three Commissioners were appointed to oversee the investigation and to establish a Strategic Support Group (SSG). The Chair of the SSG was a Commissioner from the Wales and South West region.

The IPCC reported that it had been given ‘full access’ to material held by the Metropolitan Police relating to Operation Russia, and it took possession of a number of documents, including the records of debriefing interviews with Neil Putnam.

As part of its investigation, the IPCC interviewed “a number of police officers, former police officers and witnesses including: members of Mr Putnam’s family, leading counsel, former members of the CPS, and members of the media.”

The IPCC recorded that it had been given full access to information available to the MPS relating to the original investigation into Stephen Lawrence’s death, and material generated by other investigations such as the Police Complaints Authority/Kent complaint investigation.

Significantly, the IPCC also recorded that it had been given “access to confidential information held by the Anti-Corruption Command of the Metropolitan Police. Access was obtained to reports concerning alleged ‘corruption’ of a number of former officers of the Metropolitan Police. It was apparent at the outset that the MPS conducted a number of different inquiries over the possibility that ‘corruption’ may have been a feature of the Murder Investigation. Copies of these reports have been obtained”.

The IPCC considered the process by which Neil Putnam was debriefed and the information that he provided.

“It is clear from the documentation examined by the IPCC investigation team, that there was confusion as to whether David Norris (deceased) was related to Clifford Norris. From enquiries made during this investigation, there is no apparent relationship between the two men.”

## Summary of the relevant accounts given to the IPCC

### *Neil Putnam*

Mr Putnam was interviewed by the IPCC on 14 September 2006. He gave the following account:

He had never had any significant dealings with John Davidson until he joined the Regional Crime Squad. Davidson sat at a desk next to him and was his Detective Sergeant.

His relationship with Davidson was very good. He played in a football team which was coached/managed by Davidson. He visited Davidson's house on a number of occasions and met his family. Davidson came to his son's christening.

Davidson was known as 'OJ' – Obnoxious Jock – and he had been told that he was the sort of man who didn't suffer fools.

After he was arrested he was taken to the Magistrates' Court and then remanded into custody. He was taken to Folkestone. He was kept there until September when he was granted bail. All of the debriefing was done in Folkestone.

They were working together on a Sunday before a bank holiday Monday (either May or Whitsun) either in 1993 or 1994. It was a couple of months after Davidson joined the team. They were investigating robberies of jewellers in South London. "We were waiting in the office, there was only John and I in the office on this Sunday afternoon and we were just generally chatting, waiting for a phone call... we started having a conversation and I brought up the fact that John had been on the Lawrence Inquiry, and I can't remember what the question was I asked him exactly, but it was something along the lines that that must have been a tough one to be on something like that and he responded and then somehow, and I don't know quite how it came around, but he suddenly came out with the fact, he turned around and said that... he had been... I'm sure he'd been the Family Liaison Officer dealing with the family, the Lawrence family and that I then came up with the fact, I said 'You know it's so obvious that those boys were guilty' and everything else, and I remember he sort of laughed and turned round and said that he'd been dealing with Old Man Norris, that he'd been looking after him, Old Man Norris had acted as an informant for them and that they'd looked after him and that he'd looked after them, and it had been... and then he said the words it was a little earner."

Putnam was aware of the connection between the Norris boy and his father, and he knew that the South East Regional Crime Squad was currently working on Clifford Norris, "so you know I was a bit taken aback by it, but I just thought at that time I was also engaged in corrupt practices with other members of my team, so we didn't say anything more about it... and that's what I told the police later."

He knew from his experience that Davidson was referring to losing or hiding evidence, and that Clifford Norris had paid for it to protect his son, "he was giving them information and money in exchange for them doing whatever they did".

He concluded that more than one officer must have been involved because "police do not work corruptly independently".

He interpreted "Old Man Norris" as being the father of the boy Norris, the person who is known as Clifford Norris. "The only other man by the name of Norris that I knew was a man called David

Norris, who'd been an informant of the Metropolitan Police for many years, and I knew he was dead, he'd already been killed... and I knew it wasn't him because it was... because we were also talking in the context of the Lawrence Inquiry". He knew that Clifford Norris was "a criminal, I knew he was a gangster, he was a drug dealer".

He did not mention this to anyone prior to his arrest.

During the course of his debriefing exercise, he was visited by Detective Superintendent Yates, who told him that he had to tell them everything that he knew about corrupt practices or else he would be thrown out of the Witness Protection Scheme.

He explained his debriefing process and said "they would ask me to tell them about a subject and I would talk about it and they would write it down in a large A4 book. I remember that we spoke about John Davidson, I gave them all the details of the corruption that I was involved in with John Davidson that was... theft of some cocaine... he sold watches for me, and when he gave me some money from selling electrical goods... but then included in that time I turned round and told them about Stephen Lawrence and the conversation I'd had with John at East Dulwich Police Station in the RCS. I remember quite clearly Pat Walsh turning round and saying that 'that would blow the Metropolitan Police wide apart' because at the time we had the Macpherson Inquiry going on and there had already been some criticisms, basically it would blow the Metropolitan Police wide apart and that they would speak about it. As far as I was concerned it was recorded in the book, in the A4 book which I was then invited to sign... I remember asking whether they wanted me to make a statement about what I said, they said no, not at this time, because other people would want to speak to me regarding that and I assumed by the people at the Macpherson Inquiry".

There were dozens of A4 notebooks that were used, "a kind of light blue Banner notebook". He assumed that everything that he was saying was written down. It was recorded at the same time that he was telling them about the other Davidson allegations. Walsh and Esposito were there. Hibberd could have been around on the fringes.

The debriefers said that they were going to have to "take that back" because it was something that they could not make a decision on. He is sure that it was recorded in a notebook, although it may not have been in the same notebook as the other Davidson allegations.

Walsh did not say "this will blow the Met apart" in the debrief, it was after the debrief when he came to see him and asked him if he was sure about Lawrence. It is possible that Esposito was there as well, but he cannot be sure. Walsh seemed to him to be suggesting "are you sure you wanna be saying this".

This was not tape-recorded. Only the parts where he was admitting his own criminality were tape-recorded.

There was no statement about it and he thought that the "Macpherson people" were going to come and see him to take a statement.

He subsequently asked what was happening about it and was told that the Macpherson people would come and see him.

When he had finished giving evidence and had been released from prison he had a meeting off the M25, at Clackett Lane. He met with Bob Morrell and Simon from Witness Protection. They discussed his pension and a letter that they had written asking for no more than a 25% reduction in his pension. As they were eating he asked what was happening with the Stephen Lawrence issue as the

Macpherson people had never come to see him. Bob Morrell told him that they did not think that he was needed. He assumed that Morrell knew what he was talking about. That was the last time that he spoke to any police officer about it.

He was shown some hardback A4 books and asked whether they were the books used in the debrief. He thought that there were more books, it seemed to him that there was a pile of books about 12–18 inches high.

He is pretty sure that when he mentioned Davidson's connection to Clifford Norris it was not just informal "chit-chat".

He did not discuss these matters with Witness Protection because they were not interested.

He told his wife Gail, who was incensed by the allegation, and raised it again with his debriefers in either January or February 1999. They said that someone would be in touch and he left it at that.

He was surprised that he had not been called to give evidence at the Inquiry. When he saw the boys coming out, and the demonstrations, he thought "why haven't I been called?" He mentioned this to someone when he was staying in Horsham. He cannot remember who it was.

He told Gail, Graeme McLagan, Vikram Dodd and Mark Daly.

He cannot recall if he mentioned it to his solicitor.

He may have discussed it with other detainees, but he did not know their true names.

Graeme McLagan called him after the Daly programme was broadcast and asked why he did not tell him about it because he would have used it. He said to McLagan that he did know all about it, and that had been why he and Gail had approached McLagan.

He told Gail whilst he was on remand in custody. Within days of the committal proceedings in *Clark and Drury*, Gail called Graeme McLagan and told him about the Davidson allegation. After he was released, McLagan got in touch and came to see him at his home address about the *Panorama* programme.

He was interviewed extensively by McLagan and he cannot say if he mentioned the Davidson issue. He is certain that he mentioned it at some point in his discussions with McLagan. He believes that "they put that in the too difficult box".

The next time he spoke to McLagan was when *Bent Coppers* (the book) was being published.

Putnam was asked about the expression "good earner" used in *Bent Coppers* to describe David Norris (deceased). He said that he was sure that Davidson was referring to "Old Man Norris", and that they were discussing it in the context of the Lawrence Inquiry. "The conversation I had with OJ was about Stephen Lawrence and it was old man Clifford being Clifford Norris, Old Man Norris being Clifford Norris, definitely, without a shadow of a doubt."

Subsequently he got a call from Vikram Dodd and they met up. He told Dodd about the conversation with Davidson. He told Dodd that he had been told that it would "blow the Met apart".



Mark Daly came to see him, having spoken to Vikram Dodd. He asked him if he would be surprised to learn that the Met was denying all knowledge of it. He was incensed by this and decided to do the programme.

The notes of his debrief were put to him and he cannot explain why it does not appear in the criminality or the intelligence books which cover Davidson.

### **Graeme McLagan**

Graeme McLagan was spoken to by the IPCC on 30 August 2006. He stated the following:<sup>1</sup>

McLagan referred to his notebooks of contact with Neil Putnam, indicating that there was no reference to Clifford Norris in the notes.

He had gained access to Putnam via an intermediary, who had stressed that one of the reasons that Putnam wanted to talk concerned the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry.

The contact started whilst Putnam was in prison, but McLagan did not speak to Putnam until after he was released.

Putnam's motivation for speaking to him appeared to be that he was a Christian and felt the need to confess and unburden himself, and also he felt badly about the Stephen Lawrence case and wanted to assist, particularly because he knew that John Davidson had been involved and he had told CIB that Davidson was corrupt.

McLagan got hold of copies of Putnam's three statements relating to Davidson.

He has no recollection of any mention of Clifford Norris or Davidson's connection to Clifford Norris in the Stephen Lawrence case.

He did not pursue the Davidson matters in the *Panorama* programme in 2000 because John Yates had told him that there was insufficient evidence to prosecute. There was therefore only one small reference to Putnam having labelled Davidson as corrupt. Yates had explained to McLagan the lengths that they had gone to in order to corroborate the Davidson allegations. McLagan was told by Yates that the details had been passed on to the Public Inquiry and that it had been Lord Macpherson's decision not to pass them on to the interested parties.

McLagan stated that in the interviews there was no mention of Clifford Norris or any conversation about him being a "good earner". The interview gave Putnam an ideal opportunity to detail any allegations he had about Davidson and any association with Clifford Norris. If there had been anything, he would have expected him to say it at the time.

As to the original, unedited footage, McLagan was unable to assist as to whether this had been retained.

In relation to page 279 of *Bent Coppers* in which David Norris (deceased) is described as being "a good earner", McLagan stated that this comment was not attributable to a single individual, but rather was a general comment in SERCS when Putnam joined.

One of Putnam's key concerns was the manner in which the Stephen Lawrence case had been managed and that what he had said about Davidson's corruption should have been explored.

---

<sup>1</sup> From the IPCC interview notes [D68]

After the programme, Mark Bright and/or Vikram Dodd contacted him to ask for access to Putnam. McLagan told them that Putnam did not wish to see them and it was not progressed.

About two years previously Mark Daly had approached him in connection with the corruption allegations in Stephen Lawrence. McLagan was of the opinion that the corruption allegations had already been explored.

He bumped into John Yates at the Old Bailey, who told him that he had had a disturbing interview with Mark Daly. Daly had told Yates that he had spoken to the Macpherson Panel and all of them had said that Yates did not pass on any information regarding the potential corruption of John Davidson, which would have been of interest to them over the Stephen Lawrence case. Yates was very disturbed by this and had subsequently secured written proof that he had provided this information.

He had seen an advance copy of the Daly programme when he was freelancing at the BBC. He expressed his concern at the time. He felt that they were acting on “flimsy, hearsay” evidence. He considered it to be “poor journalism”. He felt that the programme should have included Macpherson’s comments about alleged corruption.

In relation to Vikram Dodd’s article, he feels that Putnam has enlarged on things as time has gone on.

He was spoken to again on 13 June 2007. He stated the following:<sup>2</sup>

He confirmed that from the transcripts of the *Panorama* interview with Putnam in 2000 there were two pages which related to John Davidson, and one earlier mention. The earlier mention had been when there was discussion about the disposal of money from Briar Cottage. The conversation finished abruptly and then the next recording started with a conversation about the nickname “O.J.” He confirmed that there may have been some conversation not covered by the tape.

He stated that there had been no mention of Clifford Norris and that the interview had presented Putnam with a significant opportunity to do so.

He stated that he had visited Jubilee House to be given access to covert material involving Evelyn Fleckney and Bob Clark in accordance with an undertaking by the MPS. When he arrived there, there was no one there to meet him and eventually he was dealt with by Neil Hibberd. After taking advice, Hibberd produced a transcript of the covert product, together with an undertaking which he had to sign. There was no mention of John Davidson at that time.

When asked about the Hibberd/Hamilton Memorandum in August 2000, he said that he believed it must have been at about the same time as his visit to Jubilee House “bearing in mind the nature of the requests which do seem to suggest a connection between JD and Norris”.

He set out his rationale for the requests that he made. In relation to David Hamilton’s response, he felt that someone somewhere had mixed up the two Norrises and this may have been Neil Putnam.

He made it clear that he would have pursued any suggestion that Davidson had been mixed up with Clifford Norris, and had this been mentioned to him then he would have brought it up with John Yates during their subsequent contact.

He felt that Daly’s work had been “bad journalism” as there was absolutely no evidence on the corruption issue.

---

<sup>2</sup> From the IPCC interview notes [D177]

When discussing Operation Russia and Davidson's evidence to the Macpherson Inquiry he felt that the Met did not appear to have held anything back, stating that Davidson's activities had been mentioned during the Home Office Select Committee in December 1997.

Statement of John Yates dated 9 February 2007 to the IPCC:

"I do not believe it has ever been established if there were any close links, corrupt or otherwise, between Davidson and Clifford Norris, although I am aware now that Davidson may have been present at arrests/searches of Clifford Norris' address at some stage during the 1990s."

John Yates stated that he believes that Putnam has mistaken Clifford Norris for David Norris (deceased) who was handled by Davidson.

In relation to what the Inquiry was told about Davidson, Yates stated that he raised the issue with DAC Clark and Dept Comm Stevens in late July/August 1998, as soon as they had been raised by Putnam. A letter was then written to Macpherson highlighting the potential issue and a reply was received.

"I am as certain as I can be that Putnam never raised issues around Clifford Norris and an alleged corrupt relationship with John Davidson at any time during his debriefing under the auspices of Operation Russia."

Statement of DS Murrill dated 11 December 2006:

He supervised the debrief of Putnam: "I do recall that Neil Putnam had not mentioned John Davidson in connection with the Stephen Lawrence enquiry by way of providing any evidence or suggestions that Davidson was in any way involved in covering up the murder." Murrill suggested that the details of what was known were communicated to Macpherson in a letter from AC Roy Clark.

Statement of DCI Hibberd dated 24 January 2007:

He was one of the officers involved in debriefing Neil Putnam.

"Neil Putnam never passed information to me about a corrupt relationship between Clifford Norris and ex-Detective Sergeant John Davidson." He was the single point of contact for Graeme McLagan "who claimed that he had been given unrestricted access to a number of anti-corruption investigations". He assisted McLagan in getting material. "McLagan asserted that he had been given unrestricted access to all of the Operation Russia investigation material by the then Deputy Commissioner, Sir John Stevens." Documents considered by Hibberd included a complaints history relating to Davidson. States: "Historically it is believed that Davidson was a co-handler of David Norris (deceased) who was the uncle of Stephen Norris, suspected of involvement in the murder of Stephen Lawrence." [This same error appears in Yates' statement.] He stated that at the time he prepared his report he believed that "David Norris had been related to a Stephen Norris who I believed to be one of the suspects". States that at no time did Putnam mention Clifford Norris or any corrupt link to Davidson.

Statement of DS Walsh dated 7 February 2007:

One of the debriefing officers stated that Putnam's allegations are "without substance or foundation". Never mentioned Clifford Norris or any corrupt relationship with John Davidson.

Statement of Paul Bennett dated 3 October 2006:

A family protection/welfare officer, who provided witness protection for Putnam. He could not recall Putnam mentioning Clifford Norris or John Davidson.

Statement of Vincenzo Esposito dated 29 November 2006:

A debriefing officer did not recall Putnam mentioning a corrupt relationship between Davidson and Clifford Norris.

"I'm confident that if NP made allegations regarding X and Y that involved him or certainly involved members of the force that were complicit in acts of corruption then we would have to note it down because we didn't know what he was going to say... and would tend to suggest that if Neil did mention any relationship between Davidson and Clifford Norris then it would be in these books, unless the one allegation he did make we simply didn't write down for whatever reasons which seems bizarre because we wrote down so much."

He stated that if such information had been given it should have been in the Davidson section of the notes.

In 'chats' with Putnam: "He would talk about a lot of things, but we were there simply as someone to listen to what he was saying. He spoke about a lot of things, but we were there simply as someone to listen to... if he did start talking about specific operational matters we would try and steer him away from that as it was not the correct forum to discuss such things."

"The name David Norris does not mean anything to me, nor does the name Clifford Norris... I have no recollection of Neil Putnam ever making the allegation that John Davidson had a corrupt relationship with Clifford Norris at any time, nor do I recall ever hearing about this allegation from any of my colleagues at any time... I can't say if I discussed the Lawrence investigation with him; it might have come up as the Macpherson Inquiry was going on at the same time so it would have been a topical issue but I really can't remember."

### ***Conclusions expressed by the IPCC***

"The CPS Visa Team were of the opinion that it was the lack of corroborative evidence which resulted in their decision not to prosecute Davidson, rather than a 'public interest' reason. Indeed, the CPS view was that, had there been independent evidence, the likelihood was that Davidson would have been charged.

"So the assertion made to both McLagan and Mr Daly that Davidson was not charged because it was not in the Metropolitan Police's interest, owing to his involvement in the Lawrence murder investigation, is not sustainable.

"A former member of the CPS, who in 1998 was part of the 'Visa Team'... was seen by the IPCC investigation team... He was aware of the fact that John Davidson was a member of the Lawrence investigation team. He also states that he was aware that Davidson had an association with Clifford Norris and when he saw the programme, 'The Boys Who Killed Stephen Lawrence', he was not surprised at the 'link' being mentioned. This was an important part of the IPCC investigation to establish the 'link' between Davidson and Clifford Norris; however, the CPS barrister was unable to establish the source of the information that linked the two.

“There is no evidence to support that Neil Putnam told his debriefing officers of an alleged ‘corrupt relationship’ between John Davidson and Clifford Norris which had influenced the investigation into the murder of Stephen Lawrence.

“The evidence from the transcripts of the *Panorama* programme, ‘Bent Coppers’, broadcast in December 2000 is compelling in that it clearly provided Mr Putnam with his opportunity to raise the alleged ‘Clifford Norris/John Davidson link’. There is no evidence to suggest that he did.

“There is no doubt that Neil Putnam told officers debriefing him about the allegations of ‘corruption’ involving him and John Davidson. He also provided evidence to help convict former colleagues of corruption. It is clear that he also told family members and others, including journalists, about the allegations. The officers involved in the debriefing of Mr Putnam deny that he told them of any specific ‘corrupt relationship’ involving Davidson and the Stephen Lawrence murder investigation... There is no corroborative evidence to support the allegation that Mr Putnam told any Metropolitan Police Officer of a ‘corrupt link’ between Clifford Norris and John Davidson or of any specific ‘corruption’ involving the Stephen Lawrence murder investigation. I am of the view that this ‘allegation’ is not substantiated.”

As to the alleged failure to advise the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry of concerns relating to Detective Sergeant Davidson, the IPCC concluded:

“It is clear that Davidson had already given evidence to the Inquiry before Putnam had implicated him in any ‘criminal allegations’. It is also apparent that Putnam had not been arrested when the correspondence between the Inquiry and the Deputy Commissioner took place in June 1998.

...

“The IPCC investigation team has examined the personal files of the Officer ‘XX’ and of ex-Detective Sergeant Davidson, and whilst both former officers were operating in the detective areas in South London it does not appear that they were ever on the same squad or station. However, it is accepted that police officers are associated to colleagues from other stations and areas.

“There is no evidence to suggest that the Metropolitan Police withheld information concerning the integrity of Davidson from the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry. In fact, it is clear from the correspondence obtained during the investigation that the MPS ensured Sir William Macpherson was aware of the emerging facts concerning the allegations around Davidson.”

As to the consideration of corruption issues generally:

“It has been established that four reports were compiled in 1999/2000 concerning ‘intelligence around corruption issues, and links with known criminals’. However, no evidence has been discovered in relation to the ‘corrupt relationship’ of any officer on the Lawrence Murder investigation.

“The IPCC investigation has attempted to establish a ‘proven link’ between John Davidson and Clifford Norris. This has resulted in interviewing a convicted murderer serving a term of life imprisonment and researching the files of retired and deceased police officers.

“There are a number of concerns about the ‘activities’ of a former Metropolitan Police Commander and his link with ‘corruption’. Previous investigations have been undertaken and nothing proven against the former officer.

...



“To date the IPCC investigation has not been able to establish a ‘link’ between Clifford Norris and John Davidson, or any ‘corruption’ in the original Stephen Lawrence murder investigation.

“We have found no evidence in support of the ‘allegations’ made during the course of the programme. The former member of the CPS does state that he believes that he was advised of an ‘association between Clifford Norris and John Davidson’; however, he was unable to find any document to source this fact.”

During the course of the IPCC investigation, comment was made by a number of former senior officers from the MPS that “CIB3 were determined to investigate any ‘allegations of corruption’ and had there been evidence to suggest ‘corruption’ affected the Stephen Lawrence murder investigation they would have investigated the allegations with rigour.”

## **G. What Neil Putnam said about this issue during the course of the retrial of *R. v Clark and Drury* in 2011**

We have explained the circumstances of this retrial in our main report, including summarising the position adopted by the Prosecution in relation to Neil Putnam. The significant parts of his evidence are as follows:

[Questions asked by A. Jones QC for Robert Clark]

Q – Is what you said to the IPCC investigators true?

NP – Yes

...

Q – Can you just help us... how you came to appear on the *Panorama* to say these things about Detective Sergeant Davidson?

NP – I was approached by Mark Daly of the BBC. He had got my telephone number from the reporter, by Vikram Dodd... Mark Daly came to visit me and asked me some questions and basically at first I didn't want to do anything at all. But he kept pestering me and pestering me and pestering me and he came up eventually and turned around and said that, you know, basically that everything was going to be denied by the police and CIB that I had ever said anything at all regarding the Lawrence Inquiry. And I thought, I have said it before, and I will say it again, so I said yes, I agreed to do the programme.

Q – Were you paid for doing the programme?

NP – No, not at all, never received a penny.

Q – Have you tried to sell this story to the papers at all?

NP – No.

Putnam clarified that he was taken to Horsham after he was found guilty and it was at this point that he asked whether anyone was going to see him from the Macpherson Inquiry. He asked Officer Esposito, Officer Walsh and also Detective Inspector Murrill about this.

He spoke to Bob and Simon on the M25; they were discussing his pension and he asked again if anyone from the Macpherson Inquiry was going to see him about what he had said about Stephen Lawrence. They said that they did not think they would because it wasn't needed. He was surprised.

He was asked what he knew of DS Davidson's involvement in the Lawrence investigation. They discussed the case in early summer or late spring. It was either the May Day bank holiday or the Whitsun bank holiday. Putnam asked Davidson about the Lawrence Inquiry and the police investigation.

"... and I can't remember exact how the exact words that I used but eventually... it was along the lines that he said that they had looked after Old Man Norris."

"And that they had had a little earner out of it."

He did not know who the "they" were.

Q – Old Man Norris meant who?

NP – The father of one of the boys that was accused.

Q – Was he referring to a David Norris who had been killed in 1990?

NP – No, definitely not.

Q – Did you ever know that David Norris?

NP – I only saw him from a distance on one or two occasions.

Putnam clarified that this was said on a Sunday when it was just him and DS Davidson in the office.

He stated that he had sent this to Walsh and Esposito when they would be debriefing him. He looked at his diary to identify possible dates when this was said. He cannot recall how they responded. "... all I do recall is DS Walsh coming in and saying to me that this was going to blow the Metropolitan Police apart."

He was not aware that Davidson had given evidence to the Lawrence Inquiry in June 1998.

He believed that there were more notebooks than have been produced.

Q – Did you tell anybody else what you told the police about this about Davidson and the Lawrence Inquiry?

NP – I told my wife.

Q – When did you tell her?

NP – After I had confessed what I did. What I did was I promised her that every time I confess to something to the officers that I would, in my next phone, tell her what so she knew exactly what was going on, so I told her and I can't remember if I told her on the phone or I told her on the next visit that she had, and I told her about that and she was, I would say, quite incensed by it to be honest.

He was aware that his wife had spoken to the journalist Graham McLagan in 1999 after the committal.

Vikram Dodd had contacted him not long after he came out from prison.

NP – ... I know I told them about it, I remember it being written down, ... but I remember them saying... They turned around and said they were going to get somebody from Macpherson Inquiry.

The notes of what he had said about Davidson on 28 July 1998 were put to him.

Asked about the 2000 *Panorama* he said:

"I told Graeme McLagan. I know we spoke about it, but as I seem to recall, the director, the female, a lady director, I can't remember, she didn't want to get dragged down with that side of it, she said that was something else."

Putnam stated that he had already disclosed the information to the investigating team when he was in Folkestone. There was no question of not disclosing it because he was on parole.

A letter was shown to him during the course of questioning which appeared to be a letter from him to his solicitor Colin Reynolds whilst he was in custody dated 23 June 1999.

The letter refers to financial affairs and the settlement of his pension; it contains the following words: "I understood that my pension will be paid out after sentence with interest. Have we been misled yet again by my former employer? Originally, they passed a matter of pay until sentence and now this. I feel if forfeiture is made against me I'm being further punished. Not only do I receive a term of imprisonment from the courts, but I received a financial penalty. The long term implications were not exactly good before, but I feel now as though I am falling down an abyss. I had hoped for a bit of good faith from CIEP and particularly John Yates who I have described in the past as an honourable man. It seems to me they wanted a pound and a half of flesh from me... I see non-cooperation with the Crown as one means, also as Gail has mentioned, certain sections of the media are interested in speaking to me, particularly concerning possible corrupt cover up by senior Scotland Yard officials in relation to a recently well-publicised matter."

Q – Now is that a reference to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry?

NP – It was, yes. ... there were certain members... People, I knew at that time that it was Graham McLagan wanted to speak to me and that I would tell him and it would all be publicised.

Q – Tell him what?

NP – The conversation I had overheard or I had had with John Davidson.

He was asked why this did not feature in his 1999 statements and said: "I had assumed that the Macpherson Inquiry and the officers that were involved who were attached to that would come and see me and take a statement from me regarding it."

Putnam was asked about his knowledge of Davidson's relationship with "Informant I".

Putnam confirmed that he was sure that he had told the debriefers about the link between Davidson and Clifford Norris, although in cross-examination he made it clear that he did not have a specific recollection of it being written down. When Walsh said that the information would blow the Metropolitan Police apart, Esposito may not have been there; that would have been in the custody suite area.

When asked if he could have been mistaken as to who he was referring to and whether this could be David Norris, Putnam said: "It was never, ever David Norris. It was never David Norris. I knew that David Norris was dead. When I was talking to John Davidson and John was talking to me I knew then that David Norris was dead and the person that we were talking about was Clifford Norris; no one else."

On Graeme McLagan:

Q – Do you accept that, in the course of that *Panorama*, you did not make specific reference to Davidson Lawrence and the little earner that Mr Davidson told you about?

NP – Not on what was broadcast, no... I cannot recall the conversation – all the conversations I had with Graeme McLagan all those years ago.

...

Q – Is it fair to say that you cannot specifically remember whether you told Graeme McLagan about the Davidson Lawrence issue about which you're giving evidence today?

NP – I have told him about it at some point, but I don't know when. I don't even recall whether it was recorded by the cameraman.

When asked if he was aware of the allegations made against Davidson during the Public Inquiry, he said, "I still don't know to this day."

Putnam described his decision to speak to Mark Daly about these allegations as being "the biggest mistake I ever made... I ended up losing my wife because of it. I ended up getting divorced, but that's another story because she didn't want me to carry on pushing it forward".

A number of the debriefing and witness protection officers also gave evidence, as did the journalist Graeme McLagan. They all stated that Neil Putnam had not mentioned the allegation of a corrupt link between Davidson and Clifford Norris to them.

Gail Putnam gave evidence in support of her former husband and the circumstances in which he had spoken to Graeme McLagan.

## **H. Other material relevant to this issue**

We have also considered the following material capable of supporting Neil Putnam's account:

- i) Information provided to us by the journalist Michael Gillard.
- ii) A recollection of the CPS lawyer Martin Polaine.

### **Michael Gillard**

During the course of our Review, we have spoken to the journalist Michael Gillard. Mr Gillard has written extensively on the subject of police corruption, including in an updated edition of his book *The Untouchables*. During the course of our meeting, and subsequently in writing, Mr Gillard indicated that:

- i) after much consideration he felt unable to engage with our Review;

- ii) this was on the basis that the review lacked “the necessary independence and credibility” as a result of Mark Ellison’s involvement in the retrial of *R. v Clark and Drury* and the position that he adopted in relation to Neil Putnam.

In our main report we have explained how we have sought to address this suggestion of a lack of independence. On 2 September 2013, Mr Gillard provided us with an extensive note. We summarise the assertions made in this note as follows:

- i) Putnam had turned supergrass against his former detective colleagues Clark and Drury in 1998. He had also claimed that John Davidson, a Met detective on the initial Lawrence murder inquiry, had admitted in 1994 that he had been in a corrupt relationship with the gangster father of one of the suspects, David Norris.
- ii) Putnam has consistently said that he mentioned the Davidson admission to his Met handlers in 1998 but there was a high-level cover-up to hide him from the Macpherson Public Inquiry. He also claims a BBC journalist assisted the Met cover-up by suppressing the allegation in a *Panorama* documentary about Putnam. There can be no doubt that all this goes directly to the remit of your review, which is operating to the civil standard of proof.
- iii) During the *Clark and Drury* retrial, Mark Ellison QC cross-examined Putnam on the basis that he was lying about corruption and cover-up in the initial Lawrence murder inquiry. Police officers and the BBC journalist, however, who denied the cover-up, were presented as witnesses of truth.
- iv) Mr Gillard indicated that he strongly disagreed with any such conclusion and believes there is enough on the balance of probabilities to recommend an independent inquiry into the link and cover-up claims.
- v) There had been an unprecedented row within the BBC over Putnam, editorial standards and McLagan’s relationship with senior figures in the Met, in particular former Assistant Commissioner John Yates, who ran the Putnam supergrass operation.
- vi) McLagan was a witness in the *Clark and Drury* retrial. He was summonsed by the prosecution effectively to confirm on oath what he had told the IPCC in 2006, that Putnam had never mentioned the link and cover-up in their dealings for his *Panorama* ‘The Bent Cop’ broadcast by the BBC in December 2000.
- vii) The IPCC was conducting an investigation after the BBC broadcast in July 2006 of journalist Mark Daly’s documentary (‘The Boys Who Killed Stephen Lawrence’) in which Putnam spoke about the link and cover-up.
- viii) McLagan was very critical to the IPCC of the BBC and Daly’s documentary. The note of his interview also revealed a very close relationship between McLagan and the Met’s senior management at the time he made his *Panorama* documentary and subsequently. In the retrial, McLagan tried unsuccessfully to prevent disclosure of the IPCC note of his interview, which he nevertheless accepts is accurate.

We have included consideration of many of the issues raised by Mr Gillard in our main report.



## The recollection of Martin Polaine

As we have indicated above, in his statement to the IPCC in 2006, Martin Polaine, the CPS lawyer advising on Operation Russia, stated that when he saw 'The Boys Who Killed Stephen Lawrence' he was not surprised by the suggested link between John Davidson and Clifford Norris. We have spoken to Mr Polaine as part of our Review and we explored this issue with him as follows:

- MS MORGAN: ... Were you aware of Davidson giving evidence before Macpherson at that stage, so prior to the Putnam debrief?
- MR POLAINE: I don't know. Out of interest, I was keeping quite an eye on Macpherson, but I can't remember...
- MR ELLISON: We can jog your memory on that because I think that it is quite difficult to remember the dates. He gave evidence I think originally in June 1998, but he certainly came back to be cross-examined by the family on 16 July.
- MR POLAINE: Yes.
- MR ELLISON: And there had been a disclosure exercise between those dates which involved the inquiry?
- MR POLAINE: Yes.
- MR ELLISON: So he was one of the final witnesses when he came back to give evidence in July?
- MR POLAINE: Yes. I don't know. For obvious reasons, I was keeping an interest, a sort of weather eye on it, you know, from reporting I might have been aware.
- MR ELLISON: Would you have been aware that he was pretty much at the top or equal top billing of their list for the potential corruption that they were alleging in the Lawrence investigation, because Davidson was a prime target?
- MR POLAINE: Yes.
- MR ELLISON: You were aware of that?
- MR POLAINE: Yes.
- MS MORGAN: Were you aware of the overall suggestions of corruption linked to Clifford Norris that were being made at that point on behalf of the family?
- MR POLAINE: I think that I would have been in the sense of simply by dint of, you know, keeping myself apprised of what was being said at the Inquiry, so I think that I would have been.
- ...
- MS MORGAN: Coming on then to what you were able to say to the IPCC in 2006, and set against everything that you told us about the chronology, you commented to the IPCC that you were not surprised at a suggestion of a link between Clifford Norris and John Davidson.

MR POLAINE: That is right, yes.

MS MORGAN: Can you help us any more with that?

MR POLAINE: Literally, when I heard that in the *Panorama* programme, it was, it didn't come as a surprise. I genuinely don't think it was sort of déjà vu or something. My recollection is that at an early stage, obviously, when I was looking at Fleckney's debrief, the name David Norris arose and, of course, that was the unconnected David Norris, the David Norris who was murdered.

MS MORGAN: Yes.

MR POLAINE: And I remember getting clear in my own mind who that David Norris was at a very early stage. I think that even with the Met solicitors, there seemed to be some confusion over the two David Norrises, but I remember getting that very clear at an early stage. The reason is that, obviously, when you read in the debrief that he was murdered, it was "Hang on, who is this?" I remember knowing that at an early stage. I have got this recollection – and I still have this recollection – of someone – and hand on heart I don't think from CIBIC, I think from the investigative side – someone saying to me about the link between Davidson and Clifford Norris. That is why when I heard what Putnam was now alleging I wasn't surprised. I still have got that recollection of some sort of briefing – and when I say "briefing", an oral briefing where I was getting background on this, so at a fairly early stage I would say.

MS MORGAN: So fitting into the chronology, as we have been through it, you said that you didn't know about Davidson, he wasn't particularly on your radar.

MR POLAINE: That is right.

MS MORGAN: You may have known about the allegations as they were in Macpherson and the potential significance of him as a corrupt player.

MR POLAINE: Yes.

MS MORGAN: You know about what Putnam has said in the debrief.

MR POLAINE: Yes.

MS MORGAN: And then you know about Davidson as a picture from the intelligence.

MR POLAINE: Yes.

MS MORGAN: At what stage, do you think, it might be that...

MR POLAINE: I would say this must have... after Putnam's debrief, this must have been, I would say, around about the time of the advice file, either the advice was before that or something like that, but it must have been around that time. Certainly, you know, in my mind I would say it was certainly before I had given the advice. I suppose that one is looking at, depending on when the advice file was submitted, I think that one is talking about July or August, I guess. But, you know, I still have that recollection.

- MR ELLISON: Can I just come back, because trying to plug that into the context of what was going on at the time, July 1998, if you are keeping a weather eye on Macpherson, the allegation that Davidson must have been connected to Clifford Norris is coming out in the Macpherson Inquiry.
- MR POLAINE: Yes.
- MR ELLISON: So the context in which you are having it mentioned to you by somebody who is connected to the investigation, which seems to be around about the same time, is what is the person telling you about Davidson and Clifford Norris?
- MR POLAINE: I am just trying to work back. The fact about association, certainly.
- MR ELLISON: So confirmation of some sort that, as a matter of fact, there is a connection between Davidson and Norris.
- MR POLAINE: You see, I can't remember it being a case where, you know, I heard it in the Inquiry and then said to CIB3, "Oh, is this right?" My recollection is actually of being given some sort of oral briefing or being told that orally, not in confirmation of something that I had asked. My recollection – and you know what it is like, as time goes past, you try to work out whether you have been contaminated by later things and that is what is actually quite difficult. My sort of recollection is it being flagged up to me, Davidson's relevance to the Lawrence case, and it being flagged up the association between Davidson and Clifford Norris. In my recollection, if I strip away, you know, anything that might have contaminated me afterwards, that is what I seem to recollect.
- MR ELLISON: Can I just wind forward a little bit, because Macpherson reports in February 1999 and in the report, presumably you have cast an eye over that?
- MR POLAINE: Yes, absolutely.
- MR ELLISON: He is saying that there is not a shred of evidence that Davidson and Norris had any connection at all.
- MR POLAINE: Yes.
- MR ELLISON: Can you remember what you thought then when you read that in comparison to what you had been told as to whether there was a connection? In other words, was it incongruous or not? I am just trying to use it as some sort of test for actually what was being conveyed to you in the summer.
- MR POLAINE: That is a fair point.
- MR ELLISON: Did you think, "That's strange, you know, they told me there was"?
- MR POLAINE: Yes. I can't remember... I mean, I did go through the Macpherson report, but I can't remember a reaction either way. I genuinely cannot remember a reaction either way. It would be helpful to sort of, you know, time that. But all I can remember is this oral briefing at a very early stage. That is all I can remember.
- MS MORGAN: And who would have given that oral briefing?

- MR POLAINE: That is what I was trying to work out. I am pretty sure it wasn't anyone on the intelligence side. I think that it was someone on the investigative side. Now, the reality is who would it have been? Bob Murrell would be, you know, a likely candidate, I would think, because he was the one often... who was delivering papers and you would often have a conversation around issues, but I can't remember it coming from Bob and I think that I would have done. John Yates or Barry Howe, I guess, although I did see other members of Operation Russia and other officers would come up. In terms of discussions on those things at that early stage, it would tend to be confined to John Yates, Barry Howe and Bob Murrell, really.
- MS MORGAN: Given the nature of what you were looking at, the way you were approaching it, this was a briefing, not just a sort of chat, a gossip, you know, I use that word, but that wasn't the nature of the way you conducted your discussions?
- MR POLAINE: No. Obviously, sometimes, let's say, Bob Murrell might bring in the papers, you know, he might come into our rooms and we might stand and have a two or three minute discussion about what he had just given in and he might flag up if, you know, other things were expected in a couple of days, you know, this sort of thing. My recollection is... I mean, I am not suggesting anything terribly formal, but equally I am not saying standing in the corridor and saying, "By the way", you know. I remember this being – I don't think... It wasn't at Jubilee, I am saying it would have been, I think, at Ludgate Hill. On this one, I don't have a recollection of it being at Jubilee House.
- MS MORGAN: Just in the time frame that Mark identifies, reading the report at the end, so before the end of Macpherson...
- MR POLAINE: I would say in my own mind that this is before I had written the advice.
- MR ELLISON: Just to come back to the point, so your recollection is that it was a sort of statement by somebody who was in a major police investigation that there was a connection between Davidson and Norris, not that there was alleged to be in Macpherson, but that there was. In other words, it was some confirmation of there having been some relationship...
- MR POLAINE: My recollection is of the fact of it being said.
- MR ELLISON: Yes, but it is what was said.
- MR POLAINE: Absolutely. The fact of the association being said. Now, what I can't remember is, oh, did somebody say to me, just in case I had missed it, for instance, "Oh, this has just been alleged in the Macpherson Inquiry". I don't remember whether it was said like that or not, but the only thing that I would say is that, if it had been that, then scrawl forward to when Putnam comes forward to *Panorama*... You see when he then came forward, what I thought was, "Oh yes, that is what he did say", i.e. Putnam. So what was in my mind as of 2006 was that that is what Putnam said previously. If somebody had said to me, "Oh, don't forget last week it was alleged at the Inquiry that there was a link", then I would have been surprised if Putnam said it.

- MR ELLISON: So it is somebody from the investigation saying "This has been raised as a reality" and you think it was in the context of Putnam?
- MR POLAINE: Well, given that the time of when I think it was said, in other words, around about the time when I got the advice file before or I was going to get that or something, around that time, when, obviously, you have got Putnam who has just been debriefed, that is... Do I remember somebody saying "Oh, Putnam has just said..." No, I don't remember. It was the fact of, so I have obviously tied that, I suppose, to Putnam.
- MR ELLISON: You had assumed that it was from Putnam?
- MR POLAINE: Yes. I have never had a recollection of someone saying to me, "Putnam has just said", but, obviously, what my recollection is that somebody from the investigation saying to me that there is this association and time-wise it is that summer of 1998.
- MR ELLISON: Which you put down in your head to something that you think must have come from Putnam?
- MR POLAINE: Yes, that is a fair point.
- MR ELLISON: Was this an inconsequential fact in the context of the Macpherson Inquiry and the Norris/Davidson issue or something that you thought at the time "that's significant"?
- MR POLAINE: Well, not that it had any significance for my advice, but in terms of, you know, it put the individual in context. No, I mean, it wasn't... at that time it wasn't an earth shattering piece of news, because it had no bearing on that advice file.
- MR ELLISON: On your work?
- MR POLAINE: Yes.
- MR ELLISON: But you were keeping an eye on Macpherson.
- MR POLAINE: Yes, and also at this time I was still getting an understanding about the nature of a particular target or suspect, who they might be linked with. You know how you try to build a picture, so it was that more than anything.
- MR ELLISON: Did it ever appear in any of Putnam's debriefs that you were presented with?
- MR POLAINE: I don't remember seeing it in a debrief, no.





## **Appendix I2: Additional material relating to John Davidson**

In reaching the conclusions set out in our main report, we have also had regard to the following material (summarised below):

- A. The career history of John Davidson
- B. John Davidson's role in the original investigation
- C. The discipline history of John Davidson prior to 1998
- D. Extracts from John Davidson's evidence to the Public Inquiry in 1998
- E. Miscellaneous documents relating to John Davidson

### **A. The career history of John Davidson**

In order to place the allegations which have been made against John Davidson into context, we have established his career history as follows:

#### **8.1.68**

Joined the Glasgow City Police.

#### **29.6.70**

Transferred to the Metropolitan Police Service (MPS) and served at Peckham Police Station. He was engaged in street duties, Home Beat and the Crime Squad.

#### **December 1973–March 1976**

Served as a Trainee Detective Constable at Peckham Criminal Investigation Department (CID), East Dulwich CID and Camberwell Crime Squad.

#### **March 1976–November 1982**

Served as a Detective Constable with the following postings: Southwark CID, M District Robbery Squad (Camberwell), Flying Squad New Scotland Yard, Catford CID and Catford/Lee Road/Sydenham Crime Squad.

#### **November 1982**

Promoted to Detective Sergeant at Peckham CID.

#### **February 1983**

Posted to Peckham Crime Squad 'Beat Crimes' Office.

#### **October 1984**

Posted to Peckham CID.

#### **March 1986**

Posted to SO1(7) Serious Crime Task Force.

#### **January 1991**

Posted to Penge CID.

### **October 1991**

Posted to Beckenham Pro-Active Unit.

### **July 1992**

Posted back to Penge CID (as an Acting Detective Inspector).

### **November 1992**

Posted to 3 Area Major Incident Pool (where he was at the time of the murder of Stephen Lawrence on 22 April 1993).

### **April 1994**

Posted to HO13 (South East Regional Crime Squad, SERCS), where he served alongside ex-Detective Constable Neil Putnam. (It was during this time that it is alleged that he engaged in corrupt activity with other SERCS officers.)

### **August 1994**

Whilst posted to SERCS he was involved in the surveillance operation to trace and arrest Clifford Norris.

### **7.12.95**

He was suspended from duty in respect of an investigation into his business relationship with an Australian businessman (Reg Grundy).

### **16.2.96**

He reported sick for work.

### **30.3.98**

He left the police on 'medical retirement'.

### **April 1998**

He was due to appear before a Police Discipline Tribunal.

### **23.4.98**

He was served with a Salmon Notice by the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry, alleging failings in the handling of certain witnesses, including the 'informant' "James Grant", failings in his liaison with other police officers and in the interviews of Gary Dobson and Luke Knight.

### **24 and 27 April 1998**

John Davidson gave evidence to the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry.

### **16.7.98**

John Davidson was recalled to give evidence before the Stephen Lawrence Inquiry.

## **B. John Davidson's role in the original investigation**

The following chronology summarises John Davidson's role in the first weeks of the investigation, following Stephen Lawrence's murder on 22 April 1993. We have redacted the names of some individuals to protect their identities.

### **23.4.93**

The following events are included for completeness, although John Davidson did not become involved in the investigation until 24 April:

13.50: Message Number 4 – First anonymous caller states “a group of youths on the Kidbrooke Estate who always carry large knives and threaten people. They may have been involved in last night’s stabbing. Two of them are Neil Acall [sic] and Dave Norris”. The message includes reference to 102 Bournbrook Road.

17.00: Team briefing

19.45: “James Grant” (not real name) comes to Plumstead Police Station and is seen by DC Budgen. Information provided by “James Grant” was recorded in Message Number 40 as follows: “A male attended RM [Plumstead] and stated that the persons responsible for the murder on the black youth, are Jamie and Neil Acourt of 102 Bournbrook Road SE3 together with David Norris and 2 other males identity unknown. That the Acourt Brothers call themselves ‘The Krays’. In fact you can only join their gang if you stab someone. They carry knives and weapons most days. Also, David Norris stabbed Stacey Benefield a month ago in order to prove himself. Benefield was taken to the Brook Hospital and told police he didn’t know who assaulted him. He then went on to say that a young Pakistani boy was murdered last year in Well Hall, that Peter Thompson who is serving life was part of the Acourts gang. That in fact one of the Acourts killed this lad. They also stabbed a young lad at Woolwich town centre called ‘Lee’. He had a bag placed over his head and was stabbed in his legs and arms in order to torture him. Jamie is described as white, 17 years, about 5’9”, black hair, medium build. Neil is described as white, also 17 years, about 5’5”, black hair, stocky build. Both are ‘twins’, apparently the house they live in was occupied by their mum, who has since left. Believed identity of the informant established.”

#### 24.4.93

08.18: Action 34 allocated to DS Davidson ‘T/ST from N35 Wilden’

[resulted on 18.5.93 at 19.03 by DS Davidson: ‘Result – Mr Wilden passed the scene of Lawrence’s collapse on the west footway. No relevant information to add... S53 refers’]

10.00: Action 62 allocated to DS Davidson ‘T/ST from Bettles N50 re: vehicles and occupants seen’

[resulted on 26.4.93 at 19.08 by DS Davidson: ‘Result – Mrs Bettles and her 30 year old daughter, Susan, seen. No further useful information at this stage. Statement from Mrs Bettles attached. PDFs attached’]

15.17: Action 74 allocated to DS Davidson ‘Identify and research Stacey N53’ (linked to Action 75 also allocated to DS Davidson ‘Research assault on Stacey Benefield N53’ [resulted on 29.4.93 at 22.00 ‘Result – Crime sheet and statement attached. Mattie Farman to be seen re witness of assault on Stacey’]

15.18: Action 77 allocated to DS Davidson ‘I/D and research Andy Goodchild N54’ [resulted on 12.5.93 at 14.30 ‘Result – believed to be Acourt? Or Gary Dobson or David Norris’]

15.19: Action 80 allocated to DS Davidson ‘I/D and research local youths known as the Krays’ [resulted on 16.5.93 at 09.49 ‘Result – “The Krays” appear to be the Acourt brothers at 102 Bournebrook Road, being researched by DC Chase’]

16.30 approx: “James Grant” attends the police station again and speaks to DC Budgen and DS Davidson. DS Davidson was “engaged re informant”

19.11: Action 85 allocated to DS Davidson ‘T/ST N79 Ames re knowledge of incident and I/D friend’ [resulted on 25.4.93 at 15.30 ‘Result – Kellie Ann Ames seen and statement taken, She was with Sarah Courtney, 133 Langbrook Road (statement taken) Tammy Lovejoy...’]

Two anonymous letters are recovered from telephone kiosk and windscreen of a police car implicating Neil and Jamie Acourt, David Norris and Gary Dobson in the murder.

#### **25.4.93**

DS Davidson speaks to Stacey Benefield and takes statement.

#### **26.4.93**

10.03 Action 133 allocated to DS Davidson 'T/ST Mr C NI 41 Re information he wishes to give' [resulted on 29.4.93 at 15.22 'Result – C seen statement taken and attached']

10.18: Action 109 allocated to DS Davidson 'T/ST NI 07 SP – believed knows suspects' [resulted on 20.5.93 at 11.18 'Result – SP can give no evidence re this incident, but gives info of a general nature and names "Lee" as Lee Pearson']

#### **27.4.93**

07.41: Action 131 allocated to DS Davidson 'Liaise with DC May NI 37 Re Statement of Marple NI 36' [resulted on 29.4.93 at 11.51 'Result – on 26.4.93 with DC May – RA – I saw Jason Marple who although aged 17 has a mental age a great deal lower... Jason is too confused to be of any material use']

DS Davidson speaks to "James Grant" again at a public house, with DC Budgen. Computer-aided dispatch (CAD) message recorded in relation to this meeting and was also recorded in M152: "Met an informant known as 'James Grant' in local public house. He states that the person who was approached by some blacks to find out the Acourts address then was threatened by the Acourts not to tell them. The lad in question is BB who lives in... He also stated that CC saw four assailants run past the house (i.e. Dickson Road) after the assault. He left tasked to find out any more that he could. Grant then rang to say that he thinks he may have found a witness who stated to him that Neil stabbed him in the bottom part and David stabbed him in the top part. He said that this witness was on a bus, he is going to firm up the info and contact us on 28 April 1993. He stated earlier that the Acourts and Norris would probably say nothing and Dobson would crack up and probably tell all. He also said that there was a fifth blonde unknown kid present."

#### **28.4.93**

11.30: Action 148 allocated to DS Davidson 'T/ST from Linda Williams NI 76 – Drove past Dickson Road' [resulted on 30.4.93 at 14.40 'Result – Miss Williams saw 4 youths could not I/D but all white one wearing a green V jacket (described in statement) at 22.26 at Well Hall R/abt... Make enquiries to I/D jacket']

11.33: Action 149 allocated to DS Davidson 'Re-interview P NI 04 re info on suspects' [resulted on 19.5.93 at 09.45 'Result – see A109 for result']

DS Davidson takes a statement from Matthew Farman.

Duty states of both DS Davidson and DC Budgen: attended Greenwich Police Station [Dispute as to whether an attempt was made to register "James Grant" as an informant through DCI Leslie Owens].

#### **29.4.93**

14.14: Action 150 allocated to DS Davidson 'ID fully research NI 84 Leroy NI 85 Mathew NI 86 Steph' [resulted on 17.5.93 at 14.21 'Result – spoke again with Mr P who stated that they were the names he thought his daughter had spoken about. Spoke to his daughter SP who states she didn't know these names, no further assistance']



**30.4.93**

10.36: Action 180 allocated to DS Davidson 'T/ST Mattie Farman N240 re assault on Benefield' [resulted on 30.4.93 at 14.58 'Result – Farman seen @ h/a 28.4.93 and MG11 and Pdf obtained corroborating Benefield re assault. Farman states that 991 only to be used in the event that offenders are charged with other more serious offences']

10.37: Action 181 allocated to DS Davidson 'Interview Stephanie Hilton N241 re info on possible' [text cut off], [resulted on 1.5.93 at 14.54: 'Result – I attended... Spoke with Mrs Harris and her daughter Stephanie Hilton who stated that her friend Marsha Whire of... had been told by Michelle Casserly that Gary Dobson, Jamie Neil Almond had committed the murder']

DS Davidson speaks to Lee Pearson.

**1.5.93**

15.20: Action 193 allocated to DS Davidson 'Liaise with Janice Casserly N265' [resulted on 5.5.93 at 18.07 'Result – spoke with Mum and daughters Tara & Michelle. ["Witness K"] went round 102 Bournbrook Road & saw the Court brothers with others. DT has apparently been chased recently by the Acourts with knives. A young lad 11 yr old is apparently a witness – name to be obtained... RA interview DT re knowledge of Acourts']

15.26: Action 202 allocated to DS Davidson 'T/ST ["Witness K"] N277 re info told to her by Casserly N260' [resulted on 17.5.93 at 11.34 'Result – ["Witness K"] seen and states that Michelle Casserly stated that the Acourts & Dobson were responsible for the murder. This was said at school See A193']

15.57: Action 195 allocated to DS Davidson 'Interview & T/ST Adam Abbott N270 re knowledge of incident' [resulted on 17.5.93 at 14.51 'Result – saw Alan Abbott at his H/A in the presence of his mother but he refused to confirm the rumour. He did say he was approached by Stephen Lawrence's brother who asked him to find out "who killed his brother" but told him he didn't know. States he wasn't approached by anyone (i.e. the killers) but his mother thinks he is lying and although worried about him, she can understand why he will say nothing']

16.00: Action 196 allocated to DS Davidson 'Interview Louis Catano N271 re knowledge of incident' [resulted on 14.5.93 at 12.27 'Result – saw Louis Cateano at his home address... Dickson Road. He stated that on the night he was in his bedroom with his girlfriend and his bedroom faces the rear of the house. The first thing he knew of anything was when he saw policemen searching the back gardens. No useful info'].

16.09: Action 189 allocated to DS Davidson 'I/D suspected brothers mentioned by Tara and Michelle' [resulted on 16.5.93 at 15.53 'Result – spoke with Miss O'Shea – no further useful info – see A193']

**4.5.93**

10.33: Action 166 allocated to DS Davidson 'T/ST Cook N210 was in vicinity at the time of murder' [resulted on 20.5.93 at 14.34 'Result – Emma Cook of... was interviewed in the presence of her father. He was not prepared to allow his daughter to make a written statement. Emma stated that she left the H/A of SS at about 22.30 and she then walked down Well Hall Road towards the Well Hall Roundabout. She crossed over the road onto the west footpath. As she passed the bus stop close by the junction with Dickson Road, she remembers seeing two RC/3 youths standing on the pavement. These two youths moved out of her way in order to allow her to pass by. Emma is certain that she recognises one of these youths as being Stephen Lawrence (from appeal notice). Emma walked to the roundabout, turned right and then walked to her home along Rochester Way. As she was turning into Rochester Way, she heard a noise coming from the direction of the cinema on the opposite side

of the roundabout. She did not see anyone when she looked across the road, and when asked she said she did not see any of these persons whilst walking home that evening. She knows the Acourt brothers, the Lambs, David Norris and Dobson. She is sure that she did not see any of these persons whilst walking home that evening']

11.15: Action 212 allocated to DS Davidson 'I/D & research re Arbuthnot family' [resulted on 5.5.93 at 11.26 'Result – 1. Spoke with MC who stated that he had been told by SS that the Acourts were responsible. MC also states that from another source David Norris stabbed the victim (Lawrence). 2. Arbuthnots believed to be Acourts']

### 5.5.93

13.32: Action 260 allocated to DS Davidson 'ID & AMP research Zack Punt N396 and AMP Blue N397' [resulted on 24.6.93 at 11.49 'Result – Zack Punt. Zakory Edward Punt... Info called at 102 Bournbrook on Friday 7.5.93 to pick up Acourt for work']

13.33: Action 261 allocated to DS Davidson 'Liaise with DS May re informant' [resulted on 30.6.93 at 15.49 'Result – spoke to DS May who stated that he would attempt to update this info to date he has nothing further to add']

### 6.5.93

07.51: Action 272 allocated to DS Davidson 'T/ST ["Witness K"] N415 re knowledge of suspects' [resulted on 13.5.93 at 12.25 'Result – ["Witness K"] stated that on the night of the stabbing he heard about it, went for a look and presumed that as there were so many police about that it was a murder. He says he then called on the Acourts, would not give a reason why, but when pushed said yes, he suspected that they would have something to do with it. He said when he went there it was about 22.30 (he repeated the time several times). I think by the time he was seen it was rehearsed. He states he saw the two Acourts and Gary Dobson, among others, and that one has his t-shirt off but he doesn't know which one. He refused to name anyone else and refused to make a statement. He, although 22 yrs, appears to behave as a 12/13 yr old (his mother will endeavour to find the truth)']

07.51: Action 273 allocated to DS Davidson 'Trace & interview 11 yr old witness & T/ST re Knowle' [resulted on 19.5.93 at 12.30 'Result – ["Witness B"] is undoubtedly a Walter Mitty. I saw him twice once with DC Canavan and a second time with DC Hughes and because of other info I then asked that DS Kirkpatrick see him. He tells a story of a fight he saw the circumstances are such that he only thinks he saw this. He told people that he saw the murder but completely gets the venue wrong. No statement taken']

07.52: Action 275 allocated to DS Davidson 'Interview RT N262 re knowledge of incident' [resulted on 9.5.93 at 12.30 'Result – briefly interviewed RT and DT at their H/A. They stated that they had no knowledge of the stabbing other than rumours that the Acourts were responsible. RT states that the info re Norris telling him he was responsible is wrong and that Norris has not been in his house let alone tell him anything. DT states that he was chased on the past by the Acourts with knives but not assaulted. Neither would make statements']

07.54: Action 278 allocated to DS Davidson 'Conduct House to House in Purneys Rd SE9 tracing' [resulted on 21.5.93 at 17.03 'Result – spoke to Jane at No 19 Purneys Rd – no info, does not know about murder, no useful info']

08.29: Action 283 allocated to DS Davidson 'I/D & AMP research ["Witness K"]' [resulted on 18.5.93 at 14.38 'Result – ["Witness K"] (22 yrs) of... Rochester Way... Associate of the T family, believed involved "theft from m/v". Simple, acts about 14 yrs']

Message 276 completed by DC Budgen which reads as follows: "The above person ["James Grant"] stated that the Acourts have asked on numerous occasions whether they could purchase knives. They have a fascination with knives, that they usually hide them under the floorboards, that Lee Pearson was stabbed by Neil Acourt, also a Stacey was stabbed by Neil's friend. He is described as white 5'8" medium build mousy hair, curly. They the Acourts haven't been seen in the Well Hall area since the murder."

### **7.5.93**

Arrest and interviews of Gary Dobson, Neil Acourt and Jamie Acourt.

DS Davidson interviewed Gary Dobson.

### **10.5.93**

14.21: Action 296 allocated to DS Davidson 'Interview Mrs C N283 re knowledge of murder' [resulted on 19.5.93 at 10.20 'Result – Mrs C seen and has nothing further to add. Did not wish to make a statement. The S family enquiry carries on']

14.29: Action 298 allocated to DS Davidson 'Interview Lee Pearson N447 re assault' [resulted on 20.5.93 at 15.52 'Result – Lee Pearson interviewed and MGI I completed but not signed. Several attempts made to have the MGI I signed to no avail. Offence occurred o/s kebab shop and Pearson stabbed in the legs causing him to collapse']

16.10: Action 312 allocated to DS Davidson 'Research Matthew Farman N240' [resulted on 20.5.93 at 15.17 'Result – Matthew Farman I/D and in system, witness re attempted murder of Stacey Benefield, full copy LIO in system']

16.15: Action 319 allocated to DS Davidson 'I/D and fully research the Arnolds' [resulted on 19.5.93 at 12.09 'Result – I spoke to MC at length at his H/A and he has heard through rumour control inc the SS, MS. The Arnolds are believed to be the Acourts. All rumour no useful info']

16.22: Action 329 allocated to DS Davidson 'Interview N536 Terry Hughes re knowledge of murder' [resulted on 25.5.93 by DC Tomlin who took over the action on 20.5.93]

### **11.5.93**

12.19: Action 342 allocated to DS Davidson 'Liaise with DS Ashwell N545 RCS Northfleet' [resulted on 24.6.93 at 10.28 'Result – no further useful info from DS Ashwell despite calls from this office. He left it saying if there was any update he'd be in touch. He states that he only got the name McKenna from his informant, not Gary McKenna']

12.21: Action 346 allocated to DS Davidson 'Interview & AMPT/ST from Nicola Friar N355 re her movements' [resulted on 2.6.93 at 14.27 'Result – MGI I completed. Briefly she states that she stayed with Caetano 22.4.93 from 19.00 that evening until 06.30 the following morning. Neither of them left the house during her stay. She recalls policemen searching the rear garden at midnight. They have been seeing one another for three years at least, two or three times a week. Says she has never heard of the Acourts, Norris, Dobson nor has heard Louis mention them']

### **17.5.93**

DS Davidson takes a statement from "Witness K".

### **27.5.93**

11.00: Action 297 're interview SS N253 re knowledge of murder'. DC Canavan records result, indicating the following: "Mrs C seen by DS Davidson and DC Hughes. Stated that the police had

already seen SS and refused to give any more information. Her husband stated firstly that SS had said to him he had seen something then changed it to MS (SS's brother) had told him SS had seen something. Mrs C refused to make a statement. MS spoken to by DS Davidson and he denies having any such information. SS has been seen by me and DC Chase on at least three occasions. He denies having been a witness to any part of the incident and has stated that on the evening he was at home with his girlfriend Emma Cook who left and went home at about 22.30. Verified by Emma and SS's mother. SS is convinced that Neil and Jamie Acourt, Gary Dobson and David Norris are responsible but can give no evidence or grounds to support this information."

### 3.6.93

DS Davidson involved in the arrest and interviews of Luke Knight.

## C. The discipline history of John Davidson prior to 1998

By 1998, a number of discipline investigations had been undertaken in relation to John Davidson, although none resulted in any formal discipline finding against him.

The following summary has been obtained from a complaints history prepared by CIB2 (a number of the original files are no longer available):

Document 573: Copy of the complaints history of Davidson from CIB2:

7.5.96: OGI 7/95/444 Disobedience to orders, falsehood and prevarication [false duty states, transported unauthorised passenger] [Reg Grundy issue]. 'Had Davidson not retired he would have appeared before a full discipline board for these matters'.

19.10.05: OGI 7/96/443 Disobeyed a lawful order: meeting with an informant contrary to written instructions. 'Had Davidson not retired he would have appeared before a full discipline board for these matters'.

In addition, we have considered an additional complaint file (OGI 85/186) held by the Independent Police Complaints Commission (IPCC):

Complaint made by 'EA', which was eventually not proceeded with and was resolved through correspondence. The complaint was categorised as an allegation of 'abuse of authority' arising from a search of Mr A's premises on 26 November 1984. It was alleged that Davidson and other officers conducted a search of Mr A's premises without a warrant. "Our client alleges that one of the officers in question told him that they knew he was involved in drugs and that they would be back soon and if they did not find anything, they might just bring a parcel with them." Subsequent checks showed that the police did have a warrant.

John Davidson's health issues permitted his retirement prior to the resolution of outstanding disciplinary matters. We have considered the following records of the view held within the MPS about the basis of his medical retirement:

File note from Howard Gosling, Staff Officer to the Director of Personnel Management, dated 10 March 1998:

"['Officer M', 'Officer P', 'Officer B', 'Officer R'], DS John Davidson

The aforementioned officers were subject to an internal investigation by CIB2. On the day they were confronted with the evidence each went sick and declined to be interviewed. All apart from ['Officer R'] have pursued the medical retirement option... If a subsequent injury award is sought in this case, the officer considering the papers is strongly advised to draw the relevant paperwork and seriously

consider the possible default by the officers and its relationship to the wording of Regulation B4 of the Police Pension Regulation.”

Complaints history as at 5.9.96:

7.5.96: SERCS unauthorised meeting with an informant

19.10.95: CIB Management [OGI 7/95/0444]

John Davidson’s medical report dated 3 September 1996: “The Director of Occupational Health saw DS Davidson... on 21 August 1996 and he considered that there are sufficient grounds to justify a medical retirement due to a noise induced hearing loss and tinnitus. If this is accepted as an injury on duty by the line management, an injury award of 20% would be appropriate in this case.”

File note prepared by Commander Roy Clark, Co-ordinator of SERCS, dated 14 October 1996:

“Davidson is, in my opinion, attempting to avoid a Discipline Board and to obtain an enhanced pension in the process. I feel we should resist at all costs such a venture as it damages the image of the Police Service in the eyes of the public and does nothing to reassure officers who do not involve themselves in circumstances resulting in discipline hearings and are content to retire on ordinary pension grounds.”

## **D. Extracts from John Davidson’s evidence to the Public Inquiry in 1998**

**Friday 24 April 1998**

**In response to questions about “James Grant” and Stacey Benefield**

- A. [John Davidson]: ... James Grant was the name I gave him.
- Q. [Mr Lawson QC]: In due course you became what I think is known as his “handler”?
- A. Yes, sir, along with DC Budgen.
- Q. You found out who he was and you had information about his known associates presumably?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. ... you were persuaded by what you discovered in the fairly early course that he had a source very close to the Acourts?
- A. I believed his source had somebody sourced to the Acourts. I think he was getting it thirdhand. I still think he got it thirdhand.
- Q. Rather than secondhand?
- A. Rather than secondhand, yes, sir.
- Q. Nonetheless, apparently reliable information?
- A. Yes, sir, I checked most of the information he gave us on the Friday and Saturday, and I personally dealt with it and it checked out; it was reliable. The bits that could be checked out were reliable.



Q. If we go back to your statement, did part of your checking take you to Stacey Benefield? Bear in mind one of the allegations he made related to the assault on Stacey Benefield.

A. Yes, in fact the next day, the Sunday, I saw Stacey Benefield.

...

Q. You took the statement from him. Was he an apparently credible witness?

A. I believed everything he said was true, yes, sir.

Q. Can you just help us about this. I appreciate you were not in charge of the enquiry. This was on the 25th April, was it not?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You recognised as an experienced detective sergeant that, quite apart from the information being received on the murder, what was here being alleged by Benefield would justify, would it not, the immediate arrest of Norris and Acourt?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know why either or both was not arrested, in fact, until the 13th May in relation to this...?

A. I can't say the full reason; it was the decision of the SIO as to when these arrests would be made and why they would be made. I can't say a reason for all of them. I can understand why he want to arrest him initially for the murder, and this as a follow-up, but that is an opinion of the SIOs, not mine, sir.

...

Q. There was certainly an opportunity presented there, all other considerations apart, to go out and arrest Neil Acourt and Norris straightaway?

A. I think one of the – if my memory serves me right, one of the reasons that this arrest was held back was because Benefield was very, very reluctant to make or sign this statement or give evidence initially, and he was making it as he believed that Acourt and Norris would have been arrested for the murder and therefore they couldn't come back and stab him, being released on bail on this matter.

...

Q. Looking ahead a little bit, if I may, it was a little later that you obtained confirmation from the Lee who was mentioned in the Grant information, Lee Pearson, of his having been involved in an attack?

A. Yes, by the time I found who Lee was, and it was later on, he refused to make a statement or get involved at all. He was too frightened of these people.

...

Q. Though much later down the track, in fact there was an acquittal at the end of the day, was there not there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In circumstances which left something to be desired, I think?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Said even more elliptically.

A. A comment on the jury system, sir.

...

A. We followed up all the information which he gave us including the youth on the bus.

...

A. "B", yes.

Q. You said about him what here appears that he is undoubtedly a Walter Mitty?

...

A. That's correct, sir. In fact, his mother told me that this is not unusual for him to believe he sees things when he reads them in the papers and I found him a very, very easily led witness.

...

### **On the timing of the arrests**

Q. ... You say you have seen the records made for anonymous information?

A. I would have done, yes, sir.

Q. But the decisions were not yours?

A. No, sir.

Q. It was the sort of information that was being received, such as we have looked at here and some you were getting, such as from Grant, presumably was widely known within the office?

A. Yes, sir. The information would be known throughout the squad of what was being said, not necessarily by whom, but what was being said and the strength of that information.

Q. There must, presumably, have been quite a bit of talk in a professional interest about when or whether these blokes were going to be arrested?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Insofar as that is concerned, what was the talk at the town, just generally, in week 1 of the investigation?

A. There was talk, I believe, with some of the lads in the office as to when in actual fact we were going to strike.

Q. When they were going to –

A. When they were going to arrest the Acourts. I was always of the opinion to leave that to the SIO who had worked with him on several occasions on other murders and thought of him a very good detective, so I –

Q. Which one are you talking about?

A. I am talking about Mr Weeden.

...

Q. Did Mr Weeden, I was going to generally, discuss with you why the arrests were being deferred?

A. Not personally, no.

Q. Again, as an experienced detective officer yourself, you would have recognised that there was certainly by the end of the weekend, if not before, more than enough information to justify arrest?

A. I recognised there was more than enough information to arrest them, yes, sir, but I wasn't aware that, in fact, at the time there was surveillance units and such as the like set up on the houses. I could only imagine that there was other reasons.

Q. For deferring arrest?

A. For deferring arrest.

Q. Were you involved in the investigation thereafter, after 1993?

A. The only involvement I had after 1993: when I left this enquiry I was called back in, as I was on the Regional Crime Squad, and I assisted Mr Mellish in observations, surveillance and eventual arrest of Norris's father. I believe the thing was set up in order to take Norris's father away from the scene and perhaps then get witnesses to actually come forward, because there was a big fear in the estate of the Norris name.

Q. May I just ask you, when – ?

A. And in fact, if I can add, when he was arrested he had on him two loaded firearms and in his farmhouse he [has] an Oozi submachine gun with a silencer. This man was a very dangerous and frightening individual, sir.

Q. Presumably you knew that before his arrest, did you?

A. Yes, sir, in fact I dealt with him through the Stacey Benefield case.

...

### On the interviews of Gary Dobson

Q. [Mr Lawson QC]:... We understand, Mr Davidson, that you had something of a reputation for being a good interviewer. Putting false modesty to one side, is that right, sir?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. That was because of the information from Grant that, if anyone was going to crack it, it was going to be this one?

A. Yes.

Q. Is that why you were sent into bat, so to speak, with him?

A. I believe that was the reason I was picked for Dobson, yes, sir.

Q. You did interview him at some length, did you not, during the course of that day?

A. Yes, sir.

...

Q. There is one matter in particular that you have referred to in your witness statement at (WIT00010219), where you say in the second paragraph, as we see on that screen there: "I am aware of the criticism. I failed to challenge Dobson's denial of association with Norris by using the surveillance photograph showing the two together."

A. That's correct, sir.

Q. "I wasn't aware we had a photograph at the time."

A. That's correct, sir.

Q. "Had I been aware, I would certainly have put it to him."

A. That is correct, sir.

Q. "I have not been informed by any other officer that we had a photograph showing Dobson and Norris together."

A. That's correct.

...

A. ... I am very annoyed because – whether it would have made a difference I don't know, but it has certainly given me more of a lever when questioning him when he was denying association with someone I had a photograph of.

### Monday 27 April 1998

Questions asked by Mr Mansfield QC (on behalf of the Lawrence family): '... is there anything were you to be facing, which I realise you may not now, but were you to face it all again is there anything you think you might have done differently?

A. Personally, no.

Q. Nothing at all?

A. Nothing that I would have done differently.

Q. No mistakes, no delay which you feel was deleterious, in other words had a bad effect, nothing like that?

A. By me?

Q. Yes, by you?

A. Not that I can recall, sir, no.

...

### **On his attitude to whether or not it was a racist murder**

Q. ... did anything strike you, stand out when you read those statements to you?

A. I am not being vague, sir, but I don't know exactly what you are talking about. What would strike out? A boy was murdered, a young lad was murdered by four or five other young lads outside a bus stop, what would strike me about that, sir?

Q. Yes, what would strike you about that, officer?

A. It was a murder, sir, it was the most heinous offence it could be.

Q. And?

A. And, was there an and sir?

Q. Yes there is an and. I am not going to take all day about it, obviously, I just wondered if it occurred to you that it was a race attack?

A. At the stage of reading the statements I was aware there was alleged four or five white lads attacked two black lads. In my mind I would think that may have been a race attack. There was a call out, I believe, of a racial nature which again would put it in my mind that it may be a race attack. From other information I gleaned during the enquiry I would say that the persons that were believed to be allegedly responsible were persons that would have killed anyone had they been there at the time. I do not think in my own mind this was a race attack. I believe this was thugs attacking anyone, as they had done on previous occasions with other white lads.

Q. What I want to suggest to you very clearly, in what became very clear – I think it will save time if you will accept – during the Dobson interview you made it clear to Mr Dobson that you personally did not think this was a race attack, did you not?

A. By that time I didn't, no, sir.

Q. By that time you did not think it was?

A. I didn't think it was, no, sir.



Q. That is your view today, is it not?

A. It is, sir.

Q. Do you know the definition, the ACPO definition of a racial incident?

A. No, sir.

Q. You do not. Has anyone ever told you what it is?

A. Probably.

Q. Probably, but you have forgotten?

A. I would imagine, from my memory and my experience in a job, a racial incident is one which is caused by or through racism. It can be anything from a shout, in this case there was a shout, to an out and out racist attack, but because these lads had attacked whites before very, very similarly with a similar knife, the ones we believed, I believed this was thugs. They were described as the Krays. They were thugs who were out to kill, not particularly a black person, but anybody, and I believe that to this day that that was thugs, not racism, just pure bloody minded thuggery.

Q. I do not want to debate with you about the nature of racism but do you recognise that thugs who may kill white people for a variety of reasons, but who kill blacks because they are blacks are committing a racial crime?

A. Yes, sir I recognise that if they were killed because he was black that is racist.

Q. That is exactly what this case was about but you refused to recognise it, did you not?

A. I still refuse to recognise it, sir. I am very surprised that anybody knows it is about that because it has never been cleared up anyway, sir.

Q. Or is it because you know a great deal more about the Norrises?

A. I arrested his father.

Q. You arrested his father. When?

A. After this incident. In order that Mr Mellish could then try again with his statement to get witnesses because he was causing the witnesses to be in fear and alarm on the estate.

Q. I will come back to Mr Norris in a moment.

...

Q. I am going to suggest to you straightaway, Mr Davidson, that that in itself was a neglect at the very beginning to appreciate the nature of the attack and to bother to pursue it. Do you follow?

A. I know what you are saying, sir, I don't say it is a neglect, I still say it wasn't a racial attack. It was thugs attacking a poor young innocent lad. He was attacked and killed had he been black, white, green, blue or yellow he would still have been attacked and killed because they picked that man at that time, not for any other reason. Stacey Benefield was white. Lee Pearson was white,

several other lads were white. I only recently discovered that one called Kevin London was black, I didn't know that at the time.

...

... There is no special way of dealing with the witnesses in this murder than the witnesses in other murder involving gangs etc. We all know how to deal with vulnerable people or we should or we shouldn't be on the murder squad.

Q. I suggest you put most of the ones off in this enquiry and that is why they did not come forward in the end, did you not, Mr Davidson?

A. I put most of who off, sir?

Q. You put them off?

A. Who did I put off, sir?

Q. Emma Cook?

A. I put Emma Cook off, I didn't put Emma Cook off at all, sir... I dealt with two of the witnesses, sir. I provided through the Yard safe houses. I provided different identities for them. I took them away and I looked after them for a long time in this.

Q. Are these two known by initials?

A. No, they are known now by names they were Stacey Benefield and Matthew Farnham. This was the very first part of the information that I dealt with, sir, and I dealt with thoroughly and I ended up dealing with them as minding their witnesses.

Q. Was there any provision for Emma Cook, Michelle Casserly?

A. Michelle Casserly, in front of her mother used the most venomous language I have heard from a young girl to me as I walked in when I was being perfectly charming to her mother. I was trying to look after her as a girl. When a girl of 14 or 15 whatever she was at the time comes out with a mouthful in front of me I know I am up against something that is a little bit different, sir.

...

### **On the records relating to the handling of "James Grant"**

THE CHAIRMAN: We saw it [Davidson's duty state] on Friday and it does bear out, in fact, what Sergeant Davidson says, does it not?

MR MANSFIELD: His duty state does?

A. I am not going to do something and not put it in the duty state. I got paid a lot of money at the time by the police.

Q. Please be careful, Mr Davidson?

A. I am very careful, sir. I am not going to do something on a Friday for the police and not show it on the duty sheet on a day I am off playing golf.

Q. Really?

A. I would never, ever go and do something for the police when I was playing golf elsewhere. Good God, what are you suggesting, sir? Are you suggesting that I would falsely say I was somewhere when I was somewhere else.

THE CHAIRMAN: Mr Davidson?

A. I am not here for this, sir. I am not here for this at all.

THE CHAIRMAN: You must calm down because Mr Mansfield is entitled to ask the questions, so just take –

A. He is not entitled to suggest I would do that, sir.

...

Q. Unless, Mr Davidson, to put it bluntly you really did not want this informant's material to be effectively followed up. Do you follow the point?

A. I can see what you are suggesting, sir, and I would always give my all in every murder. I don't like your suggestion, sir. I would give everything in every murder to solve it and I don't like the fact you are inferring I would do anything different in this. Once again, sir, he is accusing me of racism and bad racism.

Q. A refusal by an informant, Mr Davidson, is an important matter, a refusal of a source?

A. No, sir [not] necessarily, sir. Why do people need to know that he has refused, they would know I would ask. They don't need to know he is refused that would put him as a bad informant not a good one.

Q. Did you tell senior officers that he was refusing?

A. The senior officer would ask straightaway, yes I would tell them, I wouldn't write it down though.

Q. They have been interviewed as well about this?

A. I have no doubt they have, sir.

Q. I will ask you to be –

A. Another thing I wouldn't do is get the source and not tell him. Why would I do that, sir, because I didn't want to clear up this murder? That is a terrible accusation, sir. I sorry, I don't want to sit and take this, sir. Do I have to sit here? He is accusing me of trying to stop this murder by racism. I have been in loads of incidents –

THE CHAIRMAN: Just stop for the moment.

THE WITNESS: I won't have that, sir, he is accusing me of racism openly in a Public Inquiry.

THE CHAIRMAN: Mr Davidson, you must take a pause if you will. You must know what the suggestion that is made in this case is.

THE WITNESS: I have never been accused directly of racism, sir, and I don't accept it.

...

**On his knowledge of the Norris family**

Q. [Mr Mansfield QC] The others that I want to ask you about specifically which you had got from the message the day before and I will come back to this in a moment because the name is mentioned on your message here Norris, David Norris?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. By the 27th at the very least, did you know that name by reputation?

A. I couldn't tell you when I knew that, but certainly by reputation I may have done, sir.

Q. I want to ask you carefully –

A. Not that particular Norris.

Q. No.

A. I knew the name Norris inasmuch as there was two at that time. One is dead and one is, I think, still incarcerated in prison.

Q. I will not ask for the reference but Mr Crampton when interviewed indicated that the two lots of Norrises, particularly the father of this one, was extremely well known amongst police officers. That is how he put it?

A. I had never come across him at all in my service but I may well have been aware of the name Norris.

Q. I am not suggesting you necessarily had come across him but do you agree when you first came on to this that the name Norris would have rung a great number of bells, would it not?

A. It didn't in fact, sir, with me.

Q. It did not?

A. No, I first of all thought it was the other Norris and when I discovered it wasn't I didn't know this one.

Q. Well, you certainly knew that it was not the other Norris?

A. No, the family, I thought it was connected with the family, that Norris family and discovered it wasn't. So I didn't know his father at all.

Q. But you knew by reputation about Cliff Norris?

A. No, I didn't. It was an area of London I hadn't worked, sir, he wasn't that famous.

**Thursday 16 July 1998**

John Davidson: ... I remember going to Greenwich and I remember meeting Mr Owens and I remember the purpose was to register the informant and I remember we left the informant's docket with him, but other than that that is the only time I met him, I don't remember anything else about the registration, sir, or that actual incident.

... Mr Owens may be the actual controller of the informant on paper; but for all intents and purposes in practice it [the SIO] was Mr Weeden, yes, sir.

Q. [Mr Lawson QC]: What you said, if I can just ask you about this, is he, Mr Weeden, gave you carte blanche to contact Grant and get such information as you could?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. He, Weeden, was aware of the visits that you made to see Grant and asked how meetings or outcomes of meetings recorded and where were the records deposited. You said that they were recorded on the murder squad message forms deposited by you with the murder squad for action and onward transmission to Owens?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Is that right?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Can you help us about this, Mr Davidson, that does not appear to correspond with the ordinary rules for the logging of meetings with informants?

A. No, that is correct, sir.

Q. Is that right?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were there any other written rules that applied, special rules, if you like, for AMIP teams?

A. No, sir; not that I was aware of for that time.

Q. In relation to – I do not want to go through all of the detail of this, but I imagine you will agree that in relation to the handling of informants and arrangements for meetings with informants there were strict rules about the obtaining of prior authority, were there not?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And the requirement for there to be maintained a log of authorised meetings?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Which was not done?

A. If it wasn't done, it wasn't done by Mr Weeden, sir. Mr Weeden keeps the log of authorisations of meetings with informants.



Q. But did you go to Mr Weeden –

A. Mr Weeden was aware that each day I was going out on the earliest days of the Murder Squad I would have been told I was out looking for Grant. Grant couldn't be phoned. He wasn't – Any pre-emptive meetings were previously authorised. How many times we were going out looking for him for further information or to firm up certain parts of information – it was a case of going out and finding him. A lot of times we didn't find him and a few occasions we did, but the actual authority to go and do that would be given by Mr Weeden. He would know we were going out for that purpose, among other purposes.

Q. That is the carte blanche you referred to?

A. That was the carte blanche, yes.

Q. As opposed to the ordinary rules, you anticipate?

A. Yes, the ordinary rules, I believe, were brought in very properly for policy for meeting with informants. This was a completely different ball game, sir. This was an informant registered for various reasons, but an informant [inaudible] registered for safeguards which the police haven't brought in, but I have dealt with informants all my service, sir; and in this case it was a case of trying to get information for the murder and Mr Weeden gave us carte blanche to do that.

...

Q. If you think about it, what was the reason for registering him?

A. Because of the information he was giving on that and other matters. He wasn't merely giving us information that he believed he knew who had committed the murder of Stephen Lawrence. He gave us information on other offences, although for that matter he had to be registered as an informant.

Q. What from the police view point would be the advantage or disadvantage of him being a registered informant as opposed to just an ordinary informant?

A. As a registered informant we could use him further; and it was my intention at that stage to take him beyond the Lawrence enquiry and use him as an informant in that area; and I didn't have an informant in that area, sir.

Q. Did you ever use him again?

A. No, sir. I did apply for a reward. I think I told you this in the first one.

Q. We have seen that?

A. Which he would never ever have been paid if he wasn't a registered informant, but I applied for this reward for me to give James Grant and they offered £50, sir; which was derisory. I wouldn't touch that. I was embarrassed.

...

MR MANSFIELD QC: Mr Davidson, in 1993 there were very clear rules, procedures and protocols dealing with informants, were there not?

A. There was, yes, sir.

Q. This is an area of particular concern and significance, is it not?

A. It is, sir.

Q. You cannot afford to make mistakes because you put at risk the lives of others?

A. That is correct, sir.

Q. There is very tight security in relation to information that relates to registered informants?

A. Yes, sir.

...

Q. You see, I will make it perfectly, I may have done before, but I will make it plain again, that Mr Grant was marginalised in this whole enquiry but, because Mr Grant had a particular relationship with the associates of the suspects and because he had already been told he was going to be registered, you had to go through the pretence of registering him. Do I make myself clear?

A. I know what you are suggesting, sir. If you could give me a reason for going through the pretence of registering him, for actually doing a docket, for giving it to a DCI who now says it didn't exist, for then putting in a rewards letter to being paid, which, if it was all false, would surely have slapped straight back in my face. I can't see any reason for – I can't see any reason at all, sir – let me finish – for making up a false registration. Everything that he told us went into the Murder Squad, so it mattered not if it was on a docket or not. The information that went into the Murder Squad, I followed up the information. I managed to get full statements from Benefield –

Q. Can I –

A. No, no, I will finish sir. I followed up every bit of information he gave me, and he copied it all down to the man, that I can't see any reason not to register him once I told him I was registering him. Is there any reason you can give me, sir, that I would do that?

Q. Yes?

A. Would you tell me then, sir?

Q. Certainly. I am not going through all the matters we have been through before about following it up?

A. Yes, but you are saying that I did it falsely but followed it up. Why would I do that?

Q. I will come to it?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Because this particular informant, and I am not going to disclose who it is –

A. Nor am I.

Q. But he is particularly important and significant, is he not, by the nature of the relationship?

A. What relationship, sir?

Q. The relationship that he has with the scene, the location and certain individuals who are associates of the suspects. You know who he is, do you not?

A. I know who he is, yes.

... This particular person, Mr Grant –

A. Yes.

Q. – was particularly significant because of a link, a relationship, an association he had with someone else known to an associate of the suspect, was he not?

A. I now see what you are getting at.

Q. Yes. “I now see what you are getting at.” Because he had been told he was going to be registered, do you follow – you asked the question so I am giving you the answer – because he was told by Mr Budgen that he was going to be registered, and because he had that special relationship that you have put on that piece of paper, you were stuck with somebody who is, in fact, very important to this investigation, were you not?

A. Stuck with somebody. I was quite pleased that I had a good informant, sir.

## **E. Miscellaneous documents relating to John Davidson**

### **28 April 2003**

Intelligence report prepared by DS Richard Oliver, dated 28.4.03, concerning Operation Abelard, with specific emphasis on John Davidson. It states that Davidson was attached to the initial investigation of the murder of Daniel Morgan in 1987. “DS Davidson has been investigated by this command (ACC) in the past and is known to associate with some of the subjects of not only Operation Abelade, but also several other DPS investigations.”

### **Undated reports**

Intelligence report in which Davidson is referred to as a “corrupt police officer”, prepared by DC Dennis McCarthy and dated 4.8.06.

Intelligence report detailing an incident reported by DS L, when Davidson (who was by then retired) contacted the OCG and asked L to conduct a check at the Passport Office to identify the wife of a client.

Intelligence report relating to SK who was under investigation for conducting Police National Computer (PNC) checks for John Davidson, believed to be working for Mayfare Associates at the time.

### **Overall summary of position pre-2006**

This report summarises the intelligence held on the IDG database relevant to ex-DS John Davidson prior to 27.7.06 as follows: “Intelligence suggests that Ex-DS John Davidson was a corrupt police officer.” The report summarises the content of the intelligence reports referred to above but also includes an additional document containing the following:

“Precis of intelligence held on this officer within the IDG (CLUE) database: Intelligence suggests that Ex-DS John Davidson may well have been a corrupt police officer. During his service he handled a number of informants at least one of which was a high profile criminal who was himself a known ‘corrupter’ of police officers.”

### **Report on “Informant 1” [and Operation Samoyed]**

“The purpose of this report is to outline an investigation conducted by the Metropolitan Police Service’s Anti-Corruption Squad into the activities of ‘Informant 1’ who is strongly suspected of having had corrupt relationships with police officers since his registration as an informant in 1988. He is a career criminal who operates primarily in the South East of London. A number of his previous police handlers are strongly suspected of having been corrupt. These include ex-detectives John Davidson, Officer B, Officer F, Officer G and the still serving Detective Constable R...

“In October 1998 ‘Informant 1’ was afforded the protection of the National Crime Squad Witness Protection Unit (NCS WPU) after his identity as an informant became known to major criminals in the London area through a suspected leak at the NCS Northfleet office... In November 1999, a covert CIB(3) investigation, Operation Curlew, commenced into ‘Informant 1’ activities. The purpose of this investigation was to establish whether ‘Informant 1’ was currently engaged in criminal activity, principally police corruption, and then pass the operation to one of the CIB(3) evidential teams.”

### **Action 11360: Action requested by DSI Yates on 15.2.01**

“That an urgent ‘trawl’ be made of the IICIC databases to establish if anything is held whereby ex DS John Davidson (OJ) and Dave Norris are mentioned together. This request has come from the High Court in relation to the current appeal by ex DC Robert Clark and ex DS Christopher Drury as various allegations/innuendos are being made at court.”





## Appendix I3: Article in *The Guardian* published on 23 June 2013

### *The Guardian*, 23 June 2013 (Rob Evans and Paul Lewis)

#### ***Police ‘smear’ campaign targeted Stephen Lawrence’s friends and family***

**Exclusive:** former undercover officer Peter Francis says superiors wanted him to find ‘dirt’ shortly after 1993 murder.

A police officer who spent four years living undercover in protest groups has revealed how he participated in an operation to spy on and attempt to “smear” the family of murdered teenager Stephen Lawrence, the friend who witnessed his fatal stabbing and campaigners angry at the failure to bring his killers to justice.

Peter Francis, a former undercover police officer turned whistleblower, said his superiors wanted him to find “dirt” that could be used against members of the Lawrence family, in the period shortly after Lawrence’s racist murder in April 1993.

He also said senior officers deliberately chose to withhold his role spying on the Lawrence campaign from Sir William Macpherson, who headed a public inquiry to examine the police investigation into the death.

In extracts from a joint Guardian and Channel 4 investigation, police whistleblower Peter Francis reveals disturbing details about his undercover deployment [Link to video: Undercover police officer: ‘How I spied on the Stephen Lawrence campaign’](#)

Francis said he had come under “huge and constant pressure” from superiors to “hunt for disinformation” that might be used to undermine those arguing for a better investigation into the murder. He posed as an anti-racist activist in the mid-1990s in his search for intelligence.

“I had to get any information on what was happening in the Stephen Lawrence campaign,” Francis said. “They wanted the campaign to stop. It was felt it was going to turn into an elephant.”

“Throughout my deployment there was almost constant pressure on me personally to find out anything I could that would discredit these campaigns.”

Francis also describes being involved in an ultimately failed effort to discredit Duwayne Brooks, a close friend of Lawrence who was with him on the night he was killed and the main witness to his murder. The former spy found evidence that led to Brooks being arrested and charged in October 1993, before the case was thrown out by a judge.

The disclosures, revealed in a book about undercover policing published this week, and in a joint investigation by the Guardian and Channel 4’s *Dispatches* being broadcast on Monday, will reignite the controversy over covert policing of activist groups.

Lawrence’s mother, Doreen, said the revelations were the most surprising thing she had learned about the long-running police investigation into her son’s murder: “Out of all the things I’ve found out over the years, this certainly has topped it.”

She added: "Nothing can justify the whole thing about trying to discredit the family and people around us."

In a statement, the Metropolitan police said it recognised the seriousness of the allegations – and acknowledged their impact. A spokesman said the claims would "bring particular upset" to the Lawrence family and added: "We share their concerns."

Jack Straw, the former home secretary who in 1997 ordered the inquiry that led to the 1999 Macpherson report, said: "I'm profoundly shocked by this and by what amounts to a misuse of police time and money and entirely the wrong priorities." Straw is considering personally referring the case to the Independent Police Complaints Commission.

Francis was a member of a controversial covert unit known as the Special Demonstration Squad (SDS). A two-year investigation by the Guardian has already revealed how undercover operatives routinely adopted the identities of dead children and formed long-term sexual relationships with people they were spying on.

The past practices of undercover police officers are the subject of what the Met described as "a thorough review and investigation" called Operation Herne, which is being overseen by Derbyshire's chief constable, Mick Creedon.

A spokesman said: "Operation Herne is a live investigation, four strands of which are being supervised by the Independent Police Complaints Commission, and it would be inappropriate to pre-judge its findings."

Francis has decided to reveal his true identity so he can openly call for a public inquiry into undercover policing of protest. "There are many things that I've seen that have been morally wrong, morally reprehensible," he said. "Should we, as police officers, have the power to basically undermine political campaigns? I think that the clear answer to that is no."

Francis has been co-operating with the Guardian as a confidential source since 2011, using his undercover alias Pete Black. He assumed the undercover persona between 1993 and 1997, infiltrating a group named Youth Against Racism in Europe. He said he was one of four undercover officers who were also required to feed back intelligence about the campaigns for justice over the death of Lawrence.

Francis said senior officers were afraid that anger at the failure to investigate the teenager's racist killing would spiral into disorder on the streets, and had "visions of Rodney King", whose beating at the hands of police led to the 1992 LA riots.

Francis monitored a number of "black justice" campaigns, involving relatives of mostly black men who had died in suspicious circumstances in police custody.

However, he said that his supervising officers were most interested in whatever information he could gather about the large number of groups campaigning over the death of Lawrence.

Although Francis never met the Lawrence family, who distanced themselves from political groups, he said he passed back "hearsay" about them to his superiors. He said they wanted information that could be used to undermine the campaign.

One operation Francis participated in involved coming up with evidence purporting to show Brooks involved in violent disorder. Francis said he and another undercover police officer trawled through hours of footage from a May 1993 demonstration, searching for evidence that would incriminate Brooks.

Police succeeded in having Brooks arrested and charged with criminal damage, but the case was thrown out by a judge as an abuse of the legal process. Francis said the prosecution of Brooks was part of a wider drive to damage the growing movement around Lawrence's death: "We were trying to stop the campaign in its tracks."

Doreen Lawrence said that in 1993 she was always baffled about why family liaison officers were recording the identities of everyone entering and leaving their household. She said the family had always suspected police had been gathering evidence about her visitors to discredit the family.

"We've talked about that several times but we never had any concrete [evidence]," she said.

There is no suggestion that the family liaison officers knew the purpose of the information they collected.

Francis claims that the purpose of monitoring people visiting the Lawrence family home was in order "to be able to formulate intelligence on who was going into the house with regards to which part of the political spectrum, if any, they were actually in". The former policeman added: "It would determine maybe which way the campaign's likely to go."

In 1997, Francis argued that his undercover operation should be disclosed to Macpherson, who was overseeing the public inquiry into the Met's handling of the murder. "I was convinced the SDS should come clean," he said.

However his superiors decided not to pass the information on to the inquiry, he said. He said he was told there would be "battling on the streets" if the public ever found out about his undercover operation.

Straw said that neither he nor Macpherson were informed about the undercover operations. "I should have been told of anything that was current, post the election of Tony Blair's government in early May 1997," he said.

"But much more importantly, [the] Macpherson inquiry should have been told, and also should have been given access to the results of this long-running and rather expensive undercover operation," the family and people around us."





## Appendix 14: Articles in the *Daily Mail* published in 1997

# Daily Mail

FRIDAY, FEBRUARY 14, 1997


NEWSPAPER OF THE YEAR 35p

**WIN UP TO**

**£50,000**

**INSTANT CASH EXTRA**

TODAY'S AMOUNT: PAGE 69








## Jonathan Cainer: How you can find your Valentine

SEE PAGES 50-52

# MURDERERS

## The Mail accuses these men of killing. If we are wrong, let them sue us

Gary Dobson
Neil Acourt
Jamie Acourt
Luke Knight
David Norris

**THE** *Daily Mail* today takes the unprecedented step of naming five young men as murderers.

They may not have been convicted in a court of law, but police are sure that David Norris, Neil Acourt, Jamie Acourt, Gary Dobson and Luke Knight are the white youths who killed black teenager Stephen Lawrence.

We are naming them because, despite

**COMMENT: Page 8**

a criminal case, a private prosecution and an inquest, there has still been no justice for Stephen, who was stabbed to death in a racist attack almost four years ago.

One or more of the five may have a valid defence to the charge which has been repeatedly levelled against them. So far they have steadfastly refused every opportunity to offer such a defence.

Four have refused to give any alibi for

that night in April 1993. One initially offered an alibi, but it did not stand up when police checked it out.

This week the five refused to answer any questions at the inquest on Stephen, citing their legal right of privilege not to say anything which might incriminate them.

The Lawrence case threatens to damage race relations and the reputation of British justice.

If these men are innocent they now have every opportunity to clear their names in a legal action against the *Daily Mail*. They would have to give evidence

and a jury in possession of all the facts would finally be able to decide.

Yesterday the jury at Southwark Crown Court had little doubt of one thing. It took only 30 minutes to decide unanimously that the 18-year-old A-level student was unlawfully killed, the victim of "a completely unprovoked racist attack by five white youths".

The criminal cases against Norris, 20, Neil Acourt, 21, Jamie Acourt, 19, Dobson, 21, and Knight, 20, failed because of a lack of evidence. But if they thought they had got away with the killing they

Turn to Page 6, Col. 2

INSIDE: Andrew Alexander 12, Femall 19, Diary 39, Friday First 42-48, Letters 53, TV 54-56, Coffee Break 67-69, City 70-72, Sport 73-80



# How the police

By STEPHEN WRIGHT  
Crime Correspondent

THROUGHOUT the four-and-a-half year murder investigation, police have claimed that a 'wall of silence' has foiled their efforts to bring the culprits to justice.

The PCA report exposes this as a myth, saying that vital witnesses *did* come forward during the early days of the inquiry but they were not treated properly.

"There is considerable evidence that the people of Eltham came forward with valuable information albeit in some cases reluctantly," it says. "The early information was vital. It could only have come from sources close to the suspects since street rumour and gossip would not have had time to develop. Responding to information in order to produce evidence should have been a primary focus of the murder investigation."

Numerous weaknesses in this area have been identified by the complaint investigation. For example information received by the murder incident room very soon after the murder included two anonymous notes and several anonymous telephone calls naming four of the suspects who were eventually arrested.

"The complaint investigation four years later has been able to identify several of the 'anonymous' telephone callers and has established the means by which the identity of the anonymous letter writer can be confirmed."

"Greater effort at the time might have identified the sources of the information and produced crucial evidence."

The report says that within an hour of a national television appeal on the day after the murder, a man went to Eltham

## Public's great wall of silence was a myth

### JUSTICE FOR STEPHEN LAWRENCE

Anyone with information should contact Crimestoppers on 0800 555111. All callers will remain anonymous.



Police Station 'with a substantial amount of information about possible suspects. This includes serious assaults apart from the attack on Stephen Lawrence,' the report states.

But the potential of this witness was 'not appreciated by senior officers'. Of further damage to the inquiry was the fact that although the informant's name was known to some officers, he was officially recorded as being 'anonymous'.

Officers involved in the subsequent review of the murder inquiry and later the second murder investigation both believed the man's identity was not known.

PCA investigators have, however, established the man's identity and say this information came from a 'vital witness'. Else-

where the report says that during the first few weeks of the murder inquiry, leads from a number of sources, including police informants, would have corroborated information linking four of the suspects to a number of assaults with knives.

The 14-page report sets out the details of the inquiry into Stephen's death, the Lawrence family's subsequent complaint and the Metropolitan Police review and re-investigation.

It identifies 'serious shortcomings' in a police investigation blighted by 'significant weaknesses, omissions and lost opportunities'.

Here we analyse its findings and recommendations, which make sobering reading for commissioner Sir Paul Condon and his senior officers.



The search for justice: Neville and Doreen Lawrence, above, refused to let their son's murder rest.

Left, how the Daily Mail supported their battle to find the killers of Stephen, right.

#### The first response

THE Lawrence family complained that police reacted poorly on the night of the murder, saying there was a 'casual approach' to the incident.

Appropriate road blocks were not set up to catch the suspects, they claimed. Officers arriving on the scene, the Lawrences alleged, lacked proper first aid skills and 'didn't want to get their hands dirty with a black man's blood'.

The report says the officers who arrived at the scene first 'did

what they could' for Stephen. But it adds that the seriousness of his injuries was 'not fully appreciated' and 'incorrect assumptions were made about the appropriate first aid measures required'.

The final PCA report will include recommendations on first aid training for police officers. In general, says the preliminary report, the police response at the murder scene was 'prompt and professional'. By the time Stephen died seven roadblocks

were in place — including the scene of the attack and where he fell. House-to-house inquiries started immediately afterwards and a search started for the murder weapon using a large portable light.

The report sympathises with the Lawrence family who, it says, were not fully briefed on the immediate police investigation. 'They were understandably angered and disillusioned by the limited answers they received.'

#### The investigation

TWO of the suspects could have been arrested for a separate offence of attempted murder on evidence gathered during the first weekend, says the report.

"This might have assisted the investigation of Stephen Lawrence's murder. However the detective superintendents responsible did not take this opportunity although they were aware that it was available."

"Their reasons for this decision will be one of a number of professional judgments to be commented upon in the Investigating Officer's final report."

The report also criticises forensic testing of suspects arrested. Officers were not properly briefed or debriefed. "The evidence shows that forensic testing at the homes of those arrested was not carried out to the standards required in this investigation."

A number of sources of potential forensic evidence from the murder scene were not properly handled and therefore not properly eliminated from the inquiry. Surveillance methods also come in for criticism. Four days after

the murder, several suspects were under surveillance but an independent expert says this operation 'lacked clear objectives and proper guidance'. It adds scathingly: 'Any benefit from this operation was not fully exploited. Indeed evidence shows that the surveillance operation missed an opportunity to prevent the loss of potential evidence.'

In another disturbing finding, the report says there was confusion among senior detectives as to who was exactly in charge of the investigation. After the arrests of the main suspects, the detective superintendent in charge of the investigation was 'unavoidably absent' (on private family business) and two senior colleagues argued over who was in charge of the conduct of the inquiry. Each claimed the other was in charge.

During the inquest earlier this year, the Lawrence family claimed that local intelligence on racist thugs could have been used on the night of the murder to identify the suspects. The report says, however, that there is no evidence that these records could have aided the inquiry.

#### The charge of racism

THE Lawrence family said the investigation into Stephen's death contrasted 'sharply' with the murder of a white boy called Richard Everett.

He was stabbed by a gang of Asian youths in King's Cross. In the Everett case, police made early arrests resulting in a conviction. This, said the Lawrences, was further proof of a 'lack of commitment' by police investigating their son's death.

They added that 'undue attention' was given to their son's background and his friends because police were not treating it as a racist attack and this played in a key part in allowing the culprits to escape justice.

But the report states that police did, in fact, regard it as racially motivated 'from the beginning'. It finds 'no evidence to support the allegations of racist conduct by police officers'.

#### The re-investigation

THE report is highly critical of a review of the initial murder investigation, carried out four months after Stephen's death, and a second murder inquiry started in mid-1994.

Both are described as misguided and hindering the hunt for the killers.

The internal review was commissioned by the deputy assistant commissioner for South-East London and was intended to give 'fresh impetus' to the inquiry. It concluded that the 'investigation has progressed satisfactorily and all lines of inquiry correctly pursued'.

PCA investigators take a different view. 'The review incorrectly maintained the position that much of the information available to the murder investigation team was based on anonymous or hearsay information only, which had limited their ability to achieve a successful prosecution. The complaint investigation has produced evidence showing that there were a substantial number of errors, omissions and lost opportunities in the first murder investigation.'

'In this respect the review did not fulfil its terms of reference and did not give fresh impetus to the murder

investigation. The reassurance it gave to the officer in charge of the case and to senior Metropolitan Police Service officers was ultimately highly damaging.'

Following a meeting between Sir Paul Condon and the Lawrence family in 1994, a new detective superintendent was appointed to lead a fresh murder inquiry. His brief was to pursue 'creative and original approaches to the murder investigation'. But this inquiry was fundamentally flawed, too, says the PCA report.

'Senior officers remained under the impression that the identity of the person entering the police station 21 hours after the murder was not known,' it says. 'Nor were they aware of the identity of the author of the anonymous letters naming the suspects. The complaint investigation has demonstrated that the means to identify both sources of information was available.'

The report adds: 'The Investigating Officer has concluded that of the many items outstanding from the first investigation, 11 remain potentially fruitful lines of inquiry which have not yet been properly followed up. However the passage of time must by now have diminished their potential evidential value.'



Daily Mail, Tuesday, December 16, 1997

Page 7

# Let Stephen down



## Father's anger at Condon

Continued from Page One

and said, "Oh, he's just a black fellow, we're not going to do anything". Nobody tried to save my son's life.

He was lying on the ground for 20 minutes before the ambulance came. I just can't understand this conclusion of no racism — it's either racism or corruption. There's an answer and we haven't got to that.

The report, which will be passed to Sir William Macpherson of Cluny, the retired judge heading the public inquiry into the killing, said it had not been for the persistence of Mr Lawrence and his wife Doreen much information may never have come to light.

The charges against the five youths arrested were dropped and an attempt by the family to bring a private prosecution collapsed.

At an inquest in February this year, a jury decided that 18-year-old Stephen had been unlawfully killed by five white youths 'in a completely unprovoked racist attack'. The Daily Mail then took

the unprecedented step of naming the five prime suspects as the killers and urged them to sue us if we were wrong.

Sir Paul accepted there had been problems during the initial stages of the inquiry which might have affected the outcome.

He said: 'I have had the privilege of meeting the Lawrences twice. I have expressed my regret, my apologies that this didn't lead to a prosecution. I am deeply saddened, deeply sorry, that the Met didn't bring this to a satisfactory conclusion.'

He said the initial murder inquiry team had been inundated with information and officers were already struggling to cope with ten other murder inquiries.

Many of the omissions and failures are systems failures, he said. 'The report acknowledges that a lot of hard work went into this case. The officers worked day and night. There was no lack of effort. What they were unable to do was systematically deal with the pressures they were faced with.'

Sir Paul added that the Met had learned from the case and now

had a different method of distributing murder inquiry workloads to prevent detectives becoming similarly overstretched.

The case is still not yet closed and there were still 11 leads to be followed through, he added.

The prospect of success is limited by the passage of time and a continuing reluctance of key witnesses to give evidence.

The family's solicitor Imran Khan said they were still considering legal action against officers who may have been negligent.

When the PCA investigation was ordered many officers feared it could degenerate into a witch-hunt. It was conducted by Kent Police and a number of Met officers had discipline notices served on them during their inquiries.

During one interview a senior detective who conducted a review into the original investigation was allegedly referred to at one point as the 'defendant'.

Police involved in the case have maintained that everything humanly possible was done to catch the killers.

Comment — Page EIGHT

### The prime suspects

BOTH detective superintendents decided against making an early arrest because they felt they had only 'anonymous or hearsay information which did not provide reasonable grounds for arrest'.

The PCA report criticises this policy. 'Their judgment has been tested against the records of the murder investigation.'

'These show that four days after the murder, 20 pieces of information pointed to the suspects who were eventually arrested. Some came from known sources and the complaint investigation has established that some of the anonymous sources could have been identified if appropriate action had been taken.'

'Information acquired from a local resident and available during the first weekend after the murder might have produced evidence placing the suspects at the scene on the night of the murder. However this was not followed up until six days later.'

The report says that witnesses were treated poorly during the murder inquiry while identity parades were organised badly.

'Although identification evidence was crucial to detecting this crime, the first identification parade suffered from a lack of preparation and poor communication.'

'As a result a key witness withdrew co-operation; not all potential witnesses were given the opportunity to identify suspects; not all the suspects appeared in the parade; and the wrong questions were asked of the witnesses.'

'Later identity parades suffered from similar weaknesses although not to the same extent.'

### The senior officers

THE two senior officers chiefly responsible for the investigation into Stephen Lawrence's death, so heavily criticised in the report, were Detective Superintendents Ian Crampton and Brian Weedon.

Although no officers were named in the PCA report it was damning of numerous aspects of the handling of the whole investigation.

However, despite the fact that Metropolitan Commissioner Sir Paul Condon did not rule out disciplinary hearings against officers yesterday, there can be no action against the two superintendents because they have both retired.

During the first days of the inquiry the murder hunt was conducted by Detective Superintendent Crampton. After his initial inquiries he handed over the reins to Detective Superintendent Weedon.

Both had careers built on reputations for thoroughness although neither had dealt with as high profile a murder before and despite the failure of the investigation both men have privately and publicly consistently defended their actions.

At the time of the inquest into Stephen's death Mr Weedon said: 'I

totally refute any suggestion that the police have been slow to act or reluctant to pursue information which has been given to them.'

Other senior officers later took over the investigation.

The report said weaknesses had been identified 'in the leadership, direction and quality of work of the first murder investigation.'

'Available information was not dealt with systematically and lacked the necessary analytical approach to maximise its potential to produce evidence.'

'The quality of supervision of officers was poor and assumptions were made about the standard of work being carried out that would not have withstood proper scrutiny.'

'Decisions were taken without full appreciation of the available information. The implementation of certain decisions (such as those to make arrests) was rushed and suffered from a lack of proper preparation and planning.'

'In general, the complaint investigation has identified a large number of oversights and omissions which resulted in the murder investigation failing to operate to an acceptable standard.'

157 recipes  
and that's just  
for starters.

Nigel Slater  
Real Cooking

MICHAEL  
JOSEPH

Available now in bookshops everywhere



## **Appendix 15: Article in *The Observer* published on 14 March 2010**

### ***The Observer*, 14 March 2010 (Tony Thompson)**

#### ***Inside the lonely and violent world of the Yard's elite undercover unit***

For four years, Officer A lived a secret life among anti-racist activists as they fought brutal battles with the police and the BNP. Here he tells of the terrifying life he led, the psychological burden it placed on him – and his growing fears that the work of his unit could threaten legitimate protest

They got drunk together, stood shoulder to shoulder as they fought the police and far-right activists, and became so intimately acquainted with each other's lives that in the end they were closer than brothers. But it was all a sham. Hidden among the close-knit and highly motivated group of violent far-left activists was a serving police officer, operating deep undercover, whose presence was intended to bring the group to its knees.

That man, known only as Officer A, has now come forward to give his account of the years he spent working for Scotland Yard's most secret unit, the Special Demonstration Squad (SDS), on a mission to prevent disorder on the streets of London. For four years in the mid-1990s, he lived a double life six days a week, spending just one day a week with his wife and family.

Week after week, year in and year out, he lived and breathed the life of a hardcore Trotskyist agitator with a passion for heavy drinking, a deep-seated hatred of the police and a predilection for extreme violence. It was a persona that took him to the heart of some of the most violent groups in the capital at a time when tensions between extreme left and extreme right were at their peak. "I never had any respite when I was back at home. I simply couldn't relax," said Officer A. "The respite for me was being back in my undercover flat because that was where I was supposed to be. Even if my targets were not there, I felt more at ease. I had a really good time with my targets and enjoyed their company enormously – there was a genuine bond. But I was never under any illusion about what I was there to do. They were not truly my friends. The friendship would last only up until the point when they found out what I really was. I was under no illusion about what would happen to me if they did."

The SDS started life in 1968 after anti-Vietnam war protests turned violent in Grosvenor Square, London, outside the US embassy. No one had been prepared for the unprecedented level of violence directed at the police. It was a wake-up call to senior officers in the Metropolitan police who realised they needed a new way to gather intelligence about the hate-filled "subversives" they now had to deal with.

Known as the "hairies" because they had to look like the agitators they were mixing with, the 10 undercover officers who made up the unit were given new identities, flats, vehicles and "cover" jobs while working in the field for years at a time. Officer A had joined the Met in 1986 straight from school. Having discovered an interest in political ideology and public affairs, he initially wanted to join the security service but found that entry was barred to all but Oxbridge graduates.

His best chance of doing that kind of work, he was told, would be to join the Met and apply for a job in Special Branch, essentially a wing of MI5. Having distinguished himself during cadet training and his two-year probation, he joined Special Branch after four years in uniform and spent three years working to counter Irish terrorism before being recruited to the SDS.



“The day you join the SDS, you have a big leaving do. Although you’re still a police officer, being in the SDS means you won’t be seeing any of your police friends for at least five years. During your deployment, your only official link to the Met is your payslip,” he said. SDS officers use the same methods as Frederick Forsyth detailed in *The Day of the Jackal* to choose their new identities. This involves applying for the birth certificate of someone who died at an early age and using this to fabricate a cover story. “That first step gives you a name, a flat, a vehicle and a life story that makes it all real.”

Before being deployed in the field, SDS officers are taken into a room and interrogated about every aspect of their cover story by two experienced operators. If they pass this test, they are then told the cautionary tale of how an SDS officer’s cover was blown when his targets asked him to explain the death certificate for the cover name he was using and had to jump from a second-floor window to escape.

Officer A’s initial target was a young student union activist who was a key member of an up-and-coming Trotskyist organisation that had led a violent protest against BNP paper-sellers in Brick Lane, east London. The organisation was considered one of the most violent in the capital at the time and its leader soon became a priority SDS target.

Officers normally spend months getting to know their targets and winning their confidence. In the case of Officer A, however, it took far less time. “I enrolled at the college where the target studied and on my first day there I heard a bit of an altercation while I was in the queue for lunch. A few things were said to one of the female staff, some of which had a bit of a nasty racial overtone. I pushed forward to intervene. It all got a bit heated and the guy who was giving the abuse took a swing at me. Big mistake. He was soon on the floor, out cold.

“A close friend of my target was in the canteen at the time and had seen the whole thing. A couple of hours later, I was in the student union picking up some passes and the bloke who had watched me fight was there again. He turned to my target, who was sitting next to him, and said: ‘That’s the one I was telling you about.’ A little later, my target came over and introduced himself.”

Officer A eventually agreed to attend a small demonstration the following weekend. When the event turned violent, he found himself standing next to his target and others from the group as they launched a series of attacks on uniformed police. “The one thing all these groups have in common, both on the left and the right, is a total hatred of the police,” he said. “It means you are having to maintain a false identity in a completely hostile environment. Under those circumstances you have no choice but to engage in acts of violence. That day developed into a major ruck. At the end no one would have believed I was a police officer.

“If anyone had accused me [of being a police officer] there would have been a dozen people willing to come forward and swear it wasn’t true. We were all buzzing when it was over,” said Officer A. “We couldn’t wait for the next event. Because of what we’d all been through, I was accepted by them right away.”

Officer A wasn’t the only one attacking his former colleagues. At the time of his deployment, other SDS officers had infiltrated opposing right-wing groups such as the BNP and Combat 18, as well as other far-left groups. It was a time of extreme racial tension and violent clashes with the police and rival political parties were rife. Two weeks later, Officer A took part in a much larger, far more violent, protest in Welling, south-east London, against a BNP-run bookshop that served as the party’s headquarters. Intelligence he obtained revealed that the demo was to be far larger than had been expected and that a particularly violent faction was planning to storm the bookshop and set fire to it, trapping any BNP members inside.



As a result, police leave was cancelled for that weekend and more than 7,000 officers, including a large mounted contingent, were deployed. Instead of being spread out along the entire route, police focused on blocking the main roads leading to the bookshop and forcing the march along a route that would take it away from its target. A violent confrontation ensued with a group of hardcore protesters – Officer A among them – attacking the police lines in an attempt to break through. Dozens of police and protesters were injured in the clashes.

Despite the violence, the operation was deemed to be a success for the police and Sir Paul Condon, the then Met commissioner, went to meet members of the SDS to thank them.

"I didn't have any qualms about what I was doing," said Officer A. "I was clear that my role was to target subversives and prevent disorder. The consequences of that day would have been far worse had the SDS not been involved."

At that time, some of the SDS officers were known as "shallow paddlers" because they spent only limited time with their targets. Others, like Officer A, were "deep swimmers" who immersed themselves in the role. During one operation to infiltrate an Animal Liberation Front cell, one officer is said to have lived in a squat for 18 months, virtually 24/7.

As months turned to years, Officer A's personal life was beginning to suffer, and his relationship with his wife and children was under particular pressure. One major cause of stress was that he was spending so much of his time fighting with fellow police officers and was now on the wrong side of a riot shield. "It was a total headbender," he said.

Once inside the groups they were ordered to infiltrate, it was relatively easy for SDS officers to rise to the top because they were often prepared to work long hours on boring, administrative jobs. Often they tried to become membership secretaries or treasurers, where their position gave them access to the records and secret agendas that were so useful to the security services. Often more efficient than those around them, operatives had to strike a balance to ensure they did not end up running the organisations they were trying to destroy.

In the aftermath of the Welling riot, senior Met officials began to express concern that the so-called "black campaigns" that had sprung up in the aftermath of the murder of Stephen Lawrence in April 1993 had the potential to lead to further bloodshed on the streets of the capital. "It had only been a couple of years since the beating of Rodney King led to the riots in LA. When young black men started dying in police custody and racist murders were going unsolved, a lot of people were getting increasingly angry," said Officer A. Fearing they were in danger of losing control, the SDS decided to target these new groups.

Having won the trust of several high-profile anti-facism and anti-racism activists on the far left, Officer A was ideally placed. Over the next two years he worked his way up to become branch secretary of Youth Against Racism in Europe, a leading anti-racist organisation that was a front for the far-left group Militant. Getting alongside these new targets called for a different approach, said Officer A. "You get given a file on your target that tells you everything you need to know. You become that person's brother. You know everything that makes them tick. You know how much they like to drink, you know where they like to drink. You know what kind of music they like, you know what kind of women they like. You become the brother they never knew they had. None of it is ever said to the target, it's far more subtle than that. The first time they get in the car, it will be just the right kind of music playing. The first time a redhead walks by it will be: 'God, I'm really into redheads.' It's all done fantastically cleverly."

“When your target is a man, it is just a matter of becoming his best friend. If your target is a woman, that becomes impossible. SDS officers would get together for regular meetings and you always knew if something was going on. If someone started talking about getting good information from a female target, we all knew there was only one way that could have happened. They had been sleeping with them.” He himself had slept with two members of his target group. Although not officially sanctioned, such activity among SDS officers – both male and female – was tacitly accepted and in many cases was vital in maintaining an undercover role. “You can’t be in that world full-time for five years and never have a girlfriend or boyfriend. People would start to ask questions,” said Officer A.

But the pressures continued to grow. “At first, I could convince myself that my job was about fighting subversion, but once I began targeting the groups set up to win justice for those who had died in police custody or had been victims of racism, it was clear that what the loved ones of the deceased wanted was justice. My presence in the groups made that justice harder to obtain. The remit was to prevent disorder, but by providing intelligence you rob these groups of the element of surprise. If every time they have a demonstration the agitators are prevented from causing trouble, they are less effective. Once the SDS get into an organisation, it is effectively finished.

“If I were a regular police officer and I wanted to plant a bug in your house or your office, I would need to get all kinds of permissions. But the SDS can put a person in your car, in your house, in your life for 24 hours a day for five years and nobody outside the SDS will know anything about it.

“While I was undercover, my targets would refuse to talk on the phone because they felt it wasn’t safe, but they had no qualms about inviting me into their homes to talk about their plans. I couldn’t get over the irony of it. If the SDS had been in existence at the time of the Suffragettes, their campaigns would never have got off the ground and they would have been quickly forgotten.”

The constant strain of living a double life was also beginning to take its toll. “I couldn’t get out of role. Even after 18 months I was having trouble leaving the undercover persona behind. One time I was out swimming. Someone said something derogatory and my angry persona took over. It was an immediate reaction. There was blood everywhere.”

Before they were deployed, every SDS officer was visited at home to ensure they were married. “They introduced that rule after one officer refused to come out of the field. It turned out he just enjoyed being with his contacts so much that he was willing to give up his police salary and everything that went along with it in order to stay with them. Now you have to be married on the basis that, if you have something in the real world to come back to, you are less likely to want to remain in role. That’s the theory.”

The pressure began to become intolerable when a public inquiry into the murder of Stephen Lawrence was announced. “There was concern that my role within the campaigns might emerge during the inquiry,” he said. “In the end the SDS decided not to disclose it themselves. Because the remit was to prevent disorder, it was felt that if it had emerged at the time, it would have led to more violence.

“Looking back, I should have done something. I should have dealt with this 11 years ago. I am coming forward to get closure for the things I did back then. By the end I’d spent four years fighting the police. When I came back to Special Branch I had to suppress who I was. I was no longer the same person. I hated the job and everything about it.”

Officer A was later diagnosed as suffering from post-traumatic stress disorder. He sued the Met and received an out-of-court settlement. The Metropolitan police, meanwhile, has refused to comment on any matters connected to the SDS.

## Appendix I6: Attorney-General's 'undertaking' given to Peter Francis



Attorney  
General's  
Office

Attorney General's Office  
20 Victoria Street  
London  
SW1H 0NF

T +44 (0)20 7271 2412  
F +44 (0)20 7271 2433  
[www.gov.uk/ago](http://www.gov.uk/ago)

Mark Ellison QC  
The Stephen Lawrence Review  
QEB Hollis Whiteman  
1 – 2 Laurence Pountney Hill  
London  
EC4R 0EU

21st November 2013

Dear Mr Ellison,

Thank you for your letter of 23rd October concerning the possibility of an undertaking being offered to Peter Francis should he agree to assist your review. Following consultation with the Crown Prosecution Service the Attorney General is prepared to offer Mr Francis an undertaking in the following terms:

*This is an undertaking provided to Peter Francis in respect of his provision of evidence to the Stephen Lawrence Review being carried out by Mark Ellison QC. 'Evidence' includes oral evidence, any written statement made by Mr Francis preparatory to giving evidence to the Review or during the course of his testimony to the Review, and any document or information produced to the Review by him.*

*This undertaking applies only to evidence given about matters which are within the terms of reference of the Review and limited to what has been published in the media as to what Mr Francis has said regarding his tasking and reporting connected to the Lawrence campaign.*

*No evidence Mr Francis may give before the Review, nor any evidence as defined above, will be used against Mr Francis in any criminal proceedings.*

The Attorney General is content for you to make public the existence of the undertaking should you wish.

Yours sincerely

Kevin McGinty  
Deputy Legal Secretary  
[kevin.mcginty@attorneygeneral.gsi.gov.uk](mailto:kevin.mcginty@attorneygeneral.gsi.gov.uk)



**Appendix 17: Operation Herne: Report 1 – Use of covert identities, dated 16 July 2013**

Operation  
**Herne**

Report 1 • Use of covert identities

**Mick Creedon**

Chief Constable Derbyshire Constabulary



## Operation Herne

# Executive Summary

## History

The **Special Demonstration Squad (SDS)** was an undercover unit formed by the Metropolitan Police's Special Branch. It operated between 1968 and 2008, during which time it infiltrated and reported on groups concerned in violent protest.

## Operation Herne

**Operation Herne (formerly Soisson)** was formed in October 2011 in response to allegations made by the **Guardian** newspaper about alleged misconduct and criminality engaged in by members of the SDS. Similar matters had been previously aired as early as 2002 in a BBC documentary.

## Operation Riverwood

On 4th February 2013 the Metropolitan Police received a public complaint from the family of Rod Richardson, a young boy who had died in the 1970s. It is alleged that an undercover officer working for the **National Public Order Intelligence Unit (NPOIU)** had used this child's details as his covert identity. This matter was referred to the **IPCC**. The matter was returned to the force and is currently subject of a 'local investigation'.

## National Public Order Intelligence Unit

The NPOIU was formed within the MPS in 1999 to gather and coordinate intelligence. In 2006 the governance responsibility for NPOIU was moved to the Association of Chief Police Officers, after a decision was taken that the forces where the majority of activity was taking place should be responsible for authorising future deployments. In January 2011 the NPOIU was subsumed within other units under the National Domestic Extremism Units within the MPS.

In January 1995 large numbers of police from London, Kent and Hampshire were drafted to the West Sussex harbour of Shoreham in response to protests surrounding the export of live animals to Europe. The **Animal Liberation Front (ALF)** and another animal extremist group named '**Justice Department**' had a strong base in the community there. This led to a number of protests and in October 1995 there was a further demonstration in Brightlingsea, Essex. This resulted in a record number of police being deployed to prevent widespread public disorder. Ad-hoc protest groups emerged and the need for first hand high quality intelligence was evident. This led to undercover

operatives being required to infiltrate these animal extremist organisations.

**The purpose of the NPOIU was:**

- 1 To provide the police service with the ability to develop a national threat assessment and profile for domestic extremism.
- 2 Support the police service to reduce crime and disorder from domestic extremism.
- 3 Support a proportionate police response to protest activity.
- 4 Help the police service manage concerns of communities and businesses to minimise conflict and disorder.

Control of the NPOIU moved to ACPO in 2006 under the direction of the ACPO National Co-ordinator for Domestic Extremism, **Assistant Chief Constable Anton Setchell**. He was replaced by **Detective Chief Superintendent Adrian Tudway** in 2010. The NPOIU worked with the **National Extremism Tactical Co-ordination Unit (NETCU)** and the **National Domestic Extremism Team (NDET)**.

The NPOIU now exists as part of the **National Domestic Extremism Unit (NDEU)** under the Metropolitan Police Service Specialist Operations and is run by **Detective Chief Superintendent Chris Greaney**.

## Deceased identities

On 5th February 2013 the **Home Affairs Select Committee (HASC)** questioned **Deputy Assistant Commissioner Gallan** about the alleged practice that SDS officers had used the details of dead children, as part of a cover identity for undercover police officers. At the time DAC Gallan was based in the MPS Directorate of Professional Standards and was in overall command of Operation Herne. Her appearance before the HASC led to considerable media coverage and some negative commentary. As a result of the media coverage, Operation Herne has now received enquiries from fourteen (14) families regarding seventeen (17) children.

## Operation Herne review

One hundred and forty-seven (147) named individuals are believed to have served as police officers within the SDS at all ranks from Chief Superintendent down. This covers the forty (40) years that the unit was in existence and not all the police officers were deployed in undercover roles.

At this stage one hundred and six (106) covert identities have been identified as having been used by the SDS between 1968 and 2008.

Forty-two (42) of these identities are either confirmed or highly likely to have used the details of a deceased child.

Forty-five (45) of these identities have been established as fictitious. Work continues to identify the provenance of the remaining identities.

## Operation Herne

### Neither Confirm Nor Deny (NCND)

The policy of 'neither confirming nor denying' the use of or identity of an undercover police officer is a long established one used by UK policing. It is essential so as to provide for the necessary operational security and to ensure undercover officers are clear that their identity will never be disclosed by the organisation that asked them to carry out the covert activity. The duty of care owed to such officers is an absolute one and applies during their deployments, throughout their service and continues when they are retired.

Please note that this is an interim report specifically about the use of the identities of deceased children and infants. It does not seek to cover either all of the activities of the SDS nor has it been able to completely provide all the answers regarding the use of covert identities. The report clearly explains the use of the tactic and is submitted early given the need to deal with the public concerns and is provided in agreement with the Home Office who sought to have this matter concluded before the parliamentary summer recess.

# 1

## The History of the Special Demonstration Squad

- 1.1 The Special Demonstration Squad (SDS), initially known as the Special Operations Squad (SOS), was created in 1968 by the Metropolitan Police's Special Branch in response to the Anti Vietnam War demonstrations that took place in Grosvenor Square, London on 18th March. At that time demonstrators were targeting the United States Embassy, and it was feared that lives would be lost during the increasingly violent clashes. The unit was created with direct support and funding from the Home Office.
- 1.2 Between March to October 1968, a small number of Special Branch officers were deployed to infiltrate the groups of demonstrators to provide intelligence about those organising the public disorder. These officers were successful in infiltrating the anti-war movement and were able to pass key intelligence to assist with the policing of the demonstrations. At the time, the Special Branch's activity was acknowledged as invaluable in keeping the Home Secretary of the day 'well informed'.

### Funding & Authorisation

- 1.3 Initially, the SDS was funded and authorised by the **Deputy Under Secretary of State**. At its inception the Deputy Under Secretary of State was **Sir James Waddell** and the enquiry team has a quantity of signed correspondence and other documentation from him (and his successors) relating to the squad.
- 1.4 At the end of 1968, as a result of political developments abroad and the SDS's apparent early successes it was decided that the unit should continue. Subsequently, over the intervening years the SDS expanded its remit beyond reporting upon left wing extremism to include the far right, Irish terrorist groups and any groups that were intent on committing serious public disorder.

### The Squad is renamed

- 1.5 Between November 1972 and January 1973 the SOS was renamed the '**Special Demonstration Squad**' (SDS) to reflect its evolving remit. The unit's name was then changed again around 1997 to the '**Special Duties Section**', and it remained so until it was closed in 2008.

## Operation Herne

### Home Office

- 1.6 At the insistence of the Home Office, the squad was to be maintained with the strictest secrecy, so as not to compromise the Government or its sensitive operations. It appears that significant dedicated funding was provided by the Home Office to the Metropolitan Police Service (MPS) on the grounds of paying for operational security. This issue of secrecy is a prevailing theme, and was used to justify many deployment decisions. Until the later years of the SDS's existence, very few people outside of the MPS Special Branch knew of it.
- 1.7 Over a period of time it was established that long term covert deployments would provide the best intelligence yields. Initial deployments of officers were for several years. However Operation Herne has established that there was no formal selection or training processes, little legal guidance to operatives and the SDS often had to break new ground. Practices evolved over time, as a result of officers reporting on their activities and personal initiatives and then sharing these with their colleagues. Officers were selected directly and on personal recommendation, almost always from within the MPS Special Branch.

## 2

### Operation Herne (Formerly Operation Soisson)

- 2.1 In October 2011 **DAC Mark Simmons (at the time the Director, Directorate of Professional Standards)** instructed that a full review of the SDS was necessary, following allegations made by the Guardian newspaper over the preceding months about the conduct of officers from the unit. These claims included allegations that a former SDS officer (**N14**) had a relationship with a woman whilst he had worked undercover and that he had gone on to father children with her. It was also further claimed that SDS officers had given evidence in their covert names without the court's knowledge and that this was grounds to support a miscarriage of justice.
- 2.2 Initially the review consisted of a scoping exercise and the need to gather knowledge of the SDS - still known only to a very few within the MPS. Following this work and the launch of the enquiry, the review team was provided with six thousand (6,000) paper records and a large number of computer exhibits in the form of hard drives and floppy discs. Interrogation of these exhibits has been complicated by the encryption and levels of security, but to date this work has revealed approximately fifty thousand (50,000) separate documents. This resource has continued to expand as further relevant material has been recovered (i.e. from the MPS General Registry). All documents have been scan-read, and are in the process of being placed onto secure HOLMES and indexed



- 2.3 During the initial review of material, Operation Herne identified the SDS practice of using all or part of the genuine details of deceased children to construct their covert identities. One document in particular, the 'SDS Trade Craft Manual', described the method of constructing a false identity. The methodology was justified in the Manual as the only viable means to provide a robust backstopped covert legend that would stand scrutiny. However the document's provenance is questionable, and it was written in such a way that suggested that the practice had fallen out of use by the mid-1990s.

### Operation Riverwood

- 2.4 On 4th February 2013, the Guardian (**Paul Lewis**) published an article about an alleged under cover officer (UCO) who it was claimed had used the identity of a baby that had died. It was alleged that the UCO had worked for the National Public Order Intelligence Unit (NPOIU) between 1999 and 2003 using the name of Rod Richardson. Over the following days a detailed account including photographs appeared in the paper.
- 2.5 The NPOIU was merged with National Extremism Tactical Coordination Unit (NETCU) and National Domestic Extremism Team (NDET) to form the National Domestic Extremism Unit (NDEU) in 2010. It is currently managed by SO15 within the MPS. Paul Lewis's article made further allegations of sexual relationships between different SDS officers and those they were sent to infiltrate.
- 2.6 On the same day the Directorate of Professional standards received correspondence from **Tuckers Solicitors** representing a woman named **Ms S**. The letter alleged that the Metropolitan Police had used the identity of her deceased son, Rod Richardson. The letter lodged an official complaint to the MPS on behalf of Ms S. This matter was referred to the **Independent Police Complaints Commission (IPCC)** on the 28th February 2013. Initially the IPCC determined that the mode of investigation would be 'supervised'. However the complaint has now been returned to force to deal as a 'local investigation.'
- 2.7 The findings and recommendations of the investigation have been reported to the IPCC.

## Operation Herne

### Home Affairs Select Committee

- 2.8 On the 5th February 2013 DAC Patricia Gallan appeared before the Home Affairs Select Committee (HASC). The use of deceased children's identities was a key theme in the questions from members of the HASC. During the hearing, DAC Gallan confirmed that the practice had indeed taken place and when questioned by the Committee she declined to apologise as the enquiry was ongoing. HASC has made a number of requests, for the Metropolitan Police to fully investigate the issue of the use of children's identities, to apologise for the use of the tactic and for Operation Herne to complete its enquiries as soon as possible.

### Previous publicity

- 2.9 Significantly, the alleged practice by the SDS of using deceased children's identities has been reported publicly before. In 2002 a BBC 2 documentary called 'True Spies' raised this very issue and this in turn subsequently generated further media interest in this process. In a later online article, 'Subverting the subversives', the BBC asked rhetorically, 'How would you handle taking the identity of a dead child to work under cover?' Despite wide publicity, at the time, the MPS did not receive any complaints.
- 2.10 The issue of the use of the identities of deceased children and infants by undercover police officers has since been subject to considerable media coverage and a number of questions in Parliament. In addition, a number of Members of Parliament have written to Operation Herne on behalf of their constituents about the same issue.
- 2.11 On the 9th February 2013, due to increasing media and parliamentary interest, the **Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police, Sir Bernard Hogan-Howe** decided to appoint an independent lead for Operation Herne to bring greater objectivity and transparency, and to further reassure the public of his determination to seek the truth about the allegations about the SDS. He approached the **Chief Constable of Derbyshire Mr Mick Creedon QPM**, as an independent senior officer from an external force to lead Operation Herne.
- 2.12 On the 11th February the **Home Secretary (Rt Hon Theresa May MP)** endorsed this decision and publicly announced that, the Chief Constable of Derbyshire had been appointed to lead the investigation.

'Given the seriousness of the latest allegations, the Metropolitan Police Commissioner Sir Bernard Hogan-Howe and the Chairman of the Independent Police Complaints Commission have agreed that it would be appropriate for a senior figure from outside the Metropolitan Police to take over the leadership of the investigation.'

## Public Enquiries

- 2.13 As a result of the media reporting surrounding the questions raised at HASC on the 5th February 2013, Operation Herne opened a Casualty Bureau response in case of a large number of public contacts. To date fourteen (14) enquiries from the families of seventeen (17) separate children have been received. The enquiries were from concerned members of the public who want to know whether the SDS had used their deceased relative's identities.
- 2.14 In addition, a Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) request has been received from **Duncan Hames MP** about the alleged practice of using children's identities by members of the SDS.
- 2.15 All of the enquiring members of the public have been personally visited by a family liaison officer from Operation Herne, and a letter acknowledging their enquiries has been hand delivered on behalf of Chief Constable Mick Creedon.

## 3

## How the SDS constructed identities

- 3.1 In his statement, the former SDS Chief Inspector N69 who served between 1986 and 1987 stated that,
 

‘...new recruits were instructed on how to go about obtaining false birth certificates. They would obtain details of a deceased person of a similar age from Somerset House and then use those details to go about creating their legend.’
- 3.2 This is supported by the SDS Tradecraft Manual (an organic document of initiatives, operational learning, guidelines and suggestions from established UCOs to assist other UCOs in their deployments) which states that the identities of deceased children (generally aged between 8 and 14 years) were routinely used by the SDS prior to 1995 to obtain passports, driving licences and other documents. ‘By tradition, the aspiring SDS officer's first major task.... was to spend hours and hours at St Catherine's House leafing through death registers in search of a name he could call his own....’ The manual stated that this practice was ‘unsafe’, but there were no alternatives.
 

(The author of this statement is unknown. The Tradecraft Manual was compiled over a number of years)
- 3.3 A manual entry dated June 1995 provides the first evidence of the cessation of this practice when it comments that, ‘...names are no longer obtained from the Death Register at St Catherine's House.’

## 8

## Operation Herne

- 3.4 As the SDS became more established it appears that officers could spend considerable amounts of time researching a suitable subject to assume an identity. According to N2 (a former SDS UCO and later cover officer) efforts would be made to research the existence of close family members. Names that were too unusual or too common would be discounted, as too would cases where the deceased had died in unusual or memorable circumstances. In preference, children were chosen that would have died between four (4) and eight (8) years of age and would be of broadly the same age as the UCO. Given the fact that the unit was established in 1968, and the youngest officers at that time would probably have been in their mid twenties, it is the case that some of the identities used could relate to children born as early as 1940.
- 3.5 In a video interview provided to the Guardian by the former SDS Officer N43, he described how it was common practice to weave ones own memories into that of the child he had based his covert identity upon. N43 stated that he was unhappy about using a child's details and he felt that he was stamping on their memory. N43's legend was also typical of the backstopping created by the SDS officers at the time.
- 3.6 Significantly, N43 has claimed that he had no choice, either he used the identity or he would have had to have left the unit. It is absolutely clear that the use of identities of deceased children was an established practice that new officers were 'taught'. It was what was expected of them, and was the means by which they could establish a cover identity before they were deployed. Whatever their views are now about this practice, this was not done by the officers in any underhand or salacious manner - it was what they were told to do.

## 4

### Why were deceased identities used by the SDS?

- 4.1 As outlined in the SDS Tradecraft Manual, the practice of using a genuine deceased identity was developed to create a plausible covert identity that was capable of frustrating enquiries by activists and one that could be used to generate a birth certificate thereby giving access to a range of necessary documentation in support of the covert identity.

- 4.2 To date Operation Herne has not discovered who directly introduced the tactic to the SDS - it is simply not yet known who instigated the technique in the SDS.

In 1943, members of the Security Services devised a complex sting called Operation Mincemeat. This Operation involved using the body of a drowned vagrant and false identification papers to make the Nazis believe a false information feed, ahead of the allied D Day Landings. The operation was made into a book by Ewen Montague, a play and a famous film based on these true events called '[The Man Who Never Was](#)' (1956).

- 4.3 Operation Herne has internal SDS documentation apparently written in 1996, called, 'Operational Security v Department of Social Security Records'. This document explains that even though the practice had been phased out it was still the, '[... traditional method of finding a false identity \(using a genuine birth certificate\).](#)'

- 4.4 Clearly the practice was well documented and it is apparent that the SDS was aware that the activists they were trying to infiltrate were also aware of this technique. According to the retired N2 he found himself in a situation where he had penetrated an organisation and was then asked by the group to help trace a mole among them.

- 4.5 In 1971 the author **Frederick Forsyth** published his book, 'Day of the Jackal'. This popularised the technique of how to create a false identity by researching a person that had died in childhood who had a similar date of birth and then basing a credible legend around that subject.

- 4.6 In the case of SDS officers the subject chosen had to have had an 'existence' to show up in case of basic research, by suspicious activists. A genuine identity of a deceased person was needed, as there was no viable means of inserting a fictitious entry into the records of births held by **General Records Office** (Formerly located at Somerset House in London). Moreover, if an activist was able to obtain the details of an under cover officer's birth details it would have been extremely straight forward to attend Somerset House and search the book binders to prove or disprove that the details were apparently genuine.

- 4.7 Before the transition to computer based records, although a birth certificate was never intended to be an identification document they were regularly used to apply for other documents, such as driving licences or passports. In the absence of any other documentary proof, birth certificates were used as effective identification. Indeed before modern developments they might be the only proxy identity document that most members of the public would possess.



## Operation Herne

- 4.8 Much of the work carried out by the SDS was highly sensitive and placed the UCOs at considerable risk. The need to protect their identities was of paramount importance and in the case of the Department of Social Security and the General Records Office, the SDS was highly wary of staff with activist sympathies who might be able to make unauthorised hostile searches. This again led the UCOs to have to create false identities using the details of deceased children.
- 4.9 The use of a genuine identity based upon a deceased child enabled an undercover officer to apply for other genuine identity documents to act as props, to give the officer credibility and to prevent hostile enquiries. It is still unclear how in the early years the SDS officers obtained genuine identity documents for their covert names.

## 5

### When were deceased identities used?

- 5.1 It is unclear when exactly the SDS started to use deceased identities to create their legends. To date Operation Herne has established that the earliest confirmed officer that used a deceased identity as part of his legend was in the field between 1976 and 1981. It appears that the early (post 1968) deployments did not have to be so reliant on the covert identity. The apparent change in policy is still being investigated.
- 5.2 Operation Herne has identified details of thirty-seven (37) police officers who had apparently worked for the SDS in some form by 1971; however due to the lack of detailed records the review has as yet been unable to identify whether they were all UCOs and if so establish any details of their cover names or dates of birth to cross check against General Records Office's birth and death returns.
- 5.3 It is believed that from about 1971, at least some of the officers who were deployed could have used a deceased child's identity as part of their cover. A number of this first tranche of officers are still alive and efforts are in hand to locate and interview them. The issue of whether they used a child's identity will of course be put to them, as will questions around their selection, training and support and who authorised the use of the tactic. As these enquiries are undertaken the figures of the actual numbers of identities used may change.

- 5.4 According to comments within the SDS annual review of 1994 to 1995 and internal memorandum written by N53 in 2002, the SDS practice of using deceased children's records to construct their covert identities was phased out starting in November 1994. The SDS annual review states that N26 was the first officer to have obtained a completely fictitious identity. This was not only good for ethical reasons, but it also reduced the risk of compromise, particularly where an officer might be confronted by 'their' own death certificate.
- 5.5 It is unclear whether the practice within the SDS had completely stopped by 1995, or was one gradually being phased out. There is the potential of an officer assuming an identity based on a deceased child in 1993/94 and maintaining this for several years whilst operationally deployed. If this were the case it would clearly be problematic to stop the tactic whilst the identity was in use. This means that there is the potential that the tactic was still in use until the late 1990's even though the policy had changed.
- 5.6 To date Operation Herne has been unable to find any documentary proof to confirm the end of the use of this tactic. A number of witnesses have yet to be spoken to and they may be able to clarify the position. Where former SDS officers have been asked about the practice they have freely acknowledged it happened for operational reasons and was what they were introduced to when they were recruited to the unit.
- 5.7 This report has already explained that the tactic was based upon the officer creating an identity that fitted broadly with his or her age range. The youngest officers to work in the SDS as an undercover operative were in their early 20's – meaning that the identity used would be that of a child born some twenty or so years earlier. The SDS was created in 1968 and it is known that the tactic was in use by the early 1970's – meaning the deceased children would have been born in the 1940's and early 1950's. With very few exceptions the tactic was effectively ended in the mid-1990's, meaning that any identity would have been based on a child born at the latest in the mid-1970's. Given this timeframe, it is the case that there won't have been a need to use the real identity of a child born at any time in the last almost forty (40) years. Accepting the disquiet over the tactic, the public should be reassured by this and that the tactic has a very historical perspective

Operation  
**Herne**

**6**

## How many identities are involved?

- 6.1 A core part of this enquiry has been the identification of the personnel that worked for and managed the SDS and this includes those at chief officer level who oversaw the activities of the unit. In carrying out this work, Operation Herne will establish those 'operational' staff: their roles, their recruitment and training, their attachment dates and whether they based their covert legends wholly or partly on a deceased person. As a result, a number of lists have been identified from the material. These lists are however incomplete and at times contradictory. In a number of cases the information would appear to have errors.
- 6.2 In 2002 N53 provided a series of internal memoranda in relation to a joint operation called Operation Wisdom. This operation was led by the **National Criminal Intelligence Service (NCIS)**. It concerned the identification, by the passport service, of approximately 1200 names where a passport had been applied for with a duplicate birth certificate after a death certificate had been issued. In a minute dated 2nd February 2002, N53 explained that he believed that between 1968 and 2002 there had been one hundred and two (102) SDS officers who had been provided with covert identities. N53's documentation stated that the majority of these UCO's would have used a deceased child's identity. This report is however not complete and does not hold the covert identities given to these UCO's.
- 6.3 To date Operation Herne has verified one hundred and six (106) covert names that were used by members of the SDS. Of these one hundred and six (106), forty two (42) have been either confirmed or can be treated as highly likely to have used a genuine deceased child's identity. These numbers should not be treated as absolute and may change as the enquiry continues.
- 6.4 Operation Herne has been able to establish that forty-five (45) of the identities provided in the list of 106 covert identities have been created from totally fictitious details. This assessment is based upon the research of documentary evidence within the Herne material, interviews with former SDS officers and enquiries internally within the Metropolitan Police. The dates of the deployment are also significant, as after 1994 the practice was no longer required as it was deemed unnecessary and potentially too risky in respect of potential compromise.

- 6.5 Of the remaining SDS identities in use, research continues to establish whether they are also of real people or whether they were invented. Efforts have been frustrated as there is no exhaustive list of all of the SDS's covert identities, and a number of subjects have no dates of birth or even full names. However, in the incidences where an age can be established the majority are again of young children that have died.

## 7

### SDS Management Oversight

- 7.1 A range of officers at different ranks and roles have been interviewed by the investigation team. The information provided corroborates totally the belief that for the majority of the existence of the SDS the use of deceased children's identities was accepted as standard practice. So far forty (40) have been spoken to by Operation Herne.
- 7.2 Former **Commander N85**, (Head of Special Branch between 2000 and 2004 and SDS UCO between 1978 and 1980) states that,
- '...a life of deception needs a true name to withstand scrutiny. I used an accepted practice; however, I did everything I could to avoid using the surname. There was no moralising about the process, I didn't think of it as stealing a child's identity. This was a long term political infiltration which was seen as justified. It was for Queen and country and peace and democracy. It was the way it was done. A registered birth was the strongest foundation; other methods were not available at the time'.
- 7.3 Retired **N85**, who served as the SDS Commander between 1986 and 1988 states that (Special Branch) spent, 'half our lives' at Somerset House building legends - each operative had to devise an identity for themselves. 'I inherited an approved system, ...we had the safety net that this information would never become public knowledge.'
- 7.4 Former **N67** (who served as an SDS field officer between 1981 and 1984) states that when he started at the SDS he was told to create his own identity. Although there was not one specific training manual, there was a reference folder with tried and tested best practice.
- He was aware that this documentation could help him create his legend. He gave his supervisors a list of possible identities that he researched at St Catherine's House.

## Operation Herne

- 7.5 N67 researched individuals that were born between 1951 and 1952, approximating to his own year of birth. He chose an individual who had died abroad and in turn created a legend blending his own biographical details to make his covert identity more believable.
- 7.6 Although the practice was clearly widely used by the SDS, Operation Herne has identified at least one example where an officer covertly deployed before 1994 did so, without using the details of a deceased child. The retired officer explained in an interview that he had adopted an aunt's surname and that he had successfully used it as part of his cover name.

## 8

### Neither Confirm Nor Deny Policy

- 8.1 The policy of 'neither confirm nor deny' (NCND) is a tactic adopted by police officers responding to questions at court, where there are concerns that an answer to a specific question could compromise the identity of a source or some other covert asset. It appears that the policy, although long accepted as best practice, did not derive from specific legislation. However, it has been incorporated into both Criminal Procedures and Investigatory Powers Act (CPIA) 1996 and the Freedom of Information Act 2000, in regards to the management of sensitive and public interest immunity information.
- 8.2 The concept of NCND has its roots in common law and has been regularly applied since in a number of stated cases. It also has a basis in the Human Rights Act 1998 under Article 2 (Right to life), Article 6 (Right to a fair trial) and Article 8 (Right to Privacy). Essentially a police officer will only identify an informant if required under law. Relevant cases include:
- 8.3 **R v Agar 1990:**  
Case law prevents the defence from questioning to identify the existence of a potential informant.



8.4 *Attorney General v Briant* 1846 (15 M. & W. 169) and *Mark v Beyfus* 1890 (25 QBD 424):

Which both support that an informant's identity should be protected on public interest grounds, to ensure that potential future informers aren't put off from providing assistance to Law enforcement agencies.

In *Agar*, the defendant appealed against conviction on the ground that the judge had erred in ruling that questions could not be put to police witnesses for fear of identifying informants, thereby weakening the defendant's attack on the police: The Court of Appeal held that notwithstanding the special rule of public policy which inhibited the disclosure of the identity of informants, the public interest in ensuring a fair trial for a defendant outweighed the public interest in protecting the identity of a police informer if the disclosure of the informer's identity was necessary to enable the defendant to put forward a tenable case that he had been entrapped by the police and the informer acting in concert.

In *Beyfus*, the judge stated that –

'I do not say it is a rule which can never be departed from; if upon the trial of a prisoner the judge should be of opinion that the disclosure of the name of the informant is necessary or right in order to shew (sic) the prisoner's innocence, then one public policy is in conflict with another public policy, and that which says that an innocent man is not to be condemned when his innocence can be proved is the policy that **must prevail**. But except in that case, this rule of public policy is not a matter of discretion; it is a rule of law, and as such should be applied by the judge at the trial, who should not treat it as a matter of discretion whether he should tell the witness to answer or not.'

8.5 The CPS Disclosure Manual states '...it is a standard response to adopt a neither confirm nor deny (NCND) approach.'

This is reiterated in the NPIA Guidance on the Lawful and Effective Use of Covert Techniques (2008) which states that,

'Neither confirming nor denying **in all cases** ensures that a failure to deny in any particular case does not amount, in effect, to confirmation. Confirming that there was no CHIS in a particular case would not cause immediate harm but could contribute to incremental damage in the longer term.'

The most recent relevant guidance is the Authorised Professional Practice (APP) published by the College of Policing. Within the media guidance section this APP states that:

'There must be a credible media strategy that does not allude to the use of undercover techniques, even when they have been referred to in court or elsewhere in the public domain.'

## Operation Herne

A media strategy should contain entries to the effect that no information will be passed to the media that might lead to:

- The identification of an undercover officer of covert human intelligence source.
- Revelations of covert tactics/techniques or methods.
- Revelations regarding the existence or details of particular items of technical equipment.
- Disclosure of any other sensitive process or procedure.’

8.6 The Regulation of Investigatory Powers Act (RIPA) provides that undercover officers are dealt with by the legislation for covert human intelligence sources (CHIS) and that any authorisation must consider the potential risks against the CHIS. A risk assessment is required with consideration of other safety measures. RIPA creates obligations for the authorising officer to protect all CHISs, and this responsibility will be ongoing, even when a CHIS has ceased acting as an informant.

8.7 Although under cover officers may eventually be required to give evidence, in many cases a court will grant them special measures to protect an officer’s identity.

8.8 Lastly, under common law, as an employer the MPS also has responsibilities for the safety of its staff, and potentially the outing of an officer could expose them to risk. This duty of care remains for officers who have left the service.

8.9 Operation Herne is clear that the use of this tactic was sanctioned at the highest level, was deemed as operationally necessary and was one that newly appointed undercover officers were trained in. Despite this it is clear that this tactic has been the cause of recent considerable concern and was not something that officers were always comfortable with. The question has to be addressed as to whether the parents or family members of those deceased children whose identities were used should be contacted and told of what was done. Whilst there is a strong argument that families should be contacted, this needs to be balanced against the long established NCND policy, the ongoing duty of care to the officers, the significant operational security considerations and the potential impact on elderly family members who may have dealt with their bereavement decades earlier.

## 9

### Legal Advice regarding potential criminal offences

- 9.1 Operation Herne has received independent advice through the Crown Prosecution Service (CPS).

The CPS appointed **Mr Simon Ray QC** (6 King's Bench Walk, the Temple EC4) to advise on the practice of using a deceased person's identity to form a covert one.

Mr Ray's advice considered the following offences:

- 1 The Forgery and Counterfeiting Act 1981;
- 2 Deception offences under the Theft Act 1968 and the Theft Act 1978
- 3 The Perjury Act 1911;
- 4 Misconduct in a public office, contrary to common law.
- 5 Offence under the Road Traffic Act 1988.
- 6 Identity Documents Act 2010.

- 9.2 As the SDS officer's management team were fully aware that documents were applied for in false names, any offences under Sec 15 Theft Act 1978 are unlikely to apply. There would be no offences under the Road Traffic Act as the relevant section has only been triable 'either way' (and therefore not subject to a time-limit to commence proceedings) since January 2004. Before this the offences were summary only and would have had to have been commenced within three years of commission.

- 9.3 Counsel's advice refers to the case of **R v More** [1987] which was an appeal against conviction for forgery.

After a review of the facts and the legislation Mr Ray has advised that:

- 1 Birth certificates, passports and driving licences obtained to support alias identities of undercover officers are not false instruments for the purposes of the Forgery and Counterfeiting Act 1981.
- 2 The use of an alias / false identity in itself does not amount to a deception offence under the Theft Act 1968 or the Theft Act 1978.
- 3 It is unlikely that section 5 of the Perjury Act 1911 (concerned with false statutory declarations) is engaged. However, to reach a definite conclusion it would be necessary to analyse individual applications for official documents such as passports and driving licences.

## Operation Herne

- 4 In using the details and birth certificates of deceased persons to create aliases, Mr Ray has concluded that identities for undercover SDS officers, in the circumstances described does not amount to misconduct in a public office.

It is Mr Ray's opinion that in the circumstances described that where applications were made with the knowledge and under the orders of senior officers, for the purposes of law enforcement, '...in my view it is unlikely that the dishonesty necessary to make out an offence...would be present.'

## 11

## Conclusions

- 11.1 Operation Herne has both documentary proof and witness accounts to confirm that the genuine details of deceased children were extensively used by members of the SDS until around 1995 so as to create cover identities and thereby enable the officers to infiltrate a range of violent protest groups.
- 11.2 Over the years the SDS management team were aware of the practice and indeed it was actively promoted to officers recruited to the unit. Many of the SDS managers had worked on the unit as undercover officers themselves before returning later in their careers. Whilst there was no formal training programme for an officer recruited to the unit, it is clear that once recruited, the officer was instructed to establish a covert identity and to do so they routinely made use of the tactic of using the identities of deceased children.
- 11.3 The genuine identities of the deceased children were blended with the officer's own biographical details.
- 11.4 It is apparent that regardless of the significant ethical issues, the practice of using a genuine identity was an imperfect solution of the time to address the need to backstop a cover identity and that the unit had little choice before 1994. It was around this time that other practices were in place to ensure that viable fictional profiles could be created without using deceased children's details.
- 11.5 The genuine identities of deceased people are no longer used to construct covert legends. No accredited police undercover unit carries out this practice.
- 11.6 Operation Herne has to date concentrated the work around the use of identities of deceased children by the MPS SDS unit. It also is known that the NPOIU also used this tactic and that the NPOIU UCOs were initially trained by SDS officers. It is not surprising that the tactic was repeated given the similar mission of the two units and the cross over of staff.

- 11.7 Operation Herne **has not yet researched** the broader development of covert undercover tactics in policing in England and Wales. Nevertheless as the routine use of undercover tactics in police forces developed in parallel to the SDS, it is highly possible that the establishment of covert identities through the use of details of deceased children was more widely practiced.

It is a fact that UCOs working in the field of serious and organised crime also need to establish secure covert identities, create legends, obtain documentation and if necessary withstand intensive scrutiny by their targets. It would be a mistake to assume that the use of identities of dead children was solely within the SDS and the NPOIU, and the possibility is that the tactic was more widely used.

Operation Herne will consider this aspect. It is not in the terms of reference of this enquiry to consider whether this use of deceased children's identities was more widely used by other agencies involved in covert undercover tactics.

- 11.8 There is understandable public, political and media concern about the use of the identities of deceased children, irrespective of the context, of the operational rationale, of any perceived necessity and of any legal considerations. It is right that the public is now properly reassured that this tactic no longer takes place. A number of safe guards are in place to ensure that undercover policing is now properly regulated and managed - and these include:

- 1 A clear legislative framework within the Regulation of Investigatory Powers Act 2000
- 2 The College of Policing (COP) 'Authorised Professional Practice' (APP) Oversight
- 3 A national training course for UCOs
- 4 Authority levels for UCO deployments being at Assistant Chief Constable level - although the RIPA legislation places this at superintendent level.
- 5 The need for detailed reviews and renewal of any such authorised deployments, always considering necessity and proportionality.
- 6 Clear 'use and conduct' being stipulated in any such deployments which definitively articulate in any activity that a UCO may engage in.

Protocols are now in place that allow for the creation of identities and documentation without the need to resort upon the tactics that the SDS had to rely upon.



Operation  
**Herne**

- 11.9 The deployment of properly trained and managed under cover officers to both disrupt and investigate crime is an approved vital policing tactic and has the full support of the courts, the wider public, Parliament and the Home Office. The issue of the historical use of covert identities based on the details of deceased children, however morally repugnant, should not detract from the importance of this tactic and the bravery of officers who have previously and still chose to volunteer to work in this field.
- 11.10 The integrity of the technique and the identity of UCOs must be protected and NCND should be used wherever appropriate.

Operation  
**Herne**  
Published July 2013



## Appendix I8: Documents relating to the covert recording of Duwayne Brooks and his solicitor

D7987

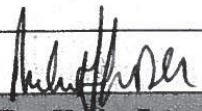
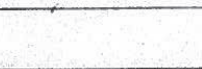
Main Line of Enquiry		Family Liaison	✓	Community Concern Assessment		Media Strategy		Resources	
Arrest Strategy		Search Strategy		Forensic Strategy		Sensitive Issues	✓	Other (Specific)	SI/AM L

**DECISION:**

At Review update meeting held on 23/00.  
 Minutes by DSupt Deighton.  
 Agreed Strategy / priorities set @ Meeting 22/5.  
 For DCI Jones to attend meeting with  
 Jane Deighton re Duwayne Brooks on 24/5  
 and for DCI Jones to seek authority and  
 deploy covert recording device for meeting  
 D.E. Chantler not to be aware.

**REASON:**

To provide update for NAC. Minute R+V.E.I.F.  
 to consider proposed strategies and review documentation  
 re PTK/18 and the way forward.  
 to prepare for meeting with Jane Deighton. - See.  
 Duwayne Brooks.  
 to seek authority for covert recording of meeting.  
 for accurate record in light of any civil action  
 or arguments advanced by Jane Deighton.  
 (Separate report) - Approved.

	M Jones	23/00.16
Officer Making Entry	Sign/Print	Date & Time
	SI/AM	09/30
Officer Making Decision (if different)	Sign/Print	Date & Time
Supervised Review		Sign/Print

1A

Form 728

**METROPOLITAN POLICE**

( C.O. DIVN./BRANCH CO24  
Reference to ( STATION 4 A.M.I.T.  
papers ( Divn DEPTFORD.  
Registry Folio No. 24 May, 2000  
G.O./Police Order refers

**Re : Deployment of Covert Audio Recording Equipment.**

-1-

D.A.C. Grieve,

This report is submitted seeking authority to deploy covert audio recording equipment at a proposed meeting that will take place on the 24th May 2000. This meeting will be with Jane Deighton (Solicitor), Duwayne Brooks, D.C. Charlton FLO, D.C.I. Jones and include yourself.

A All contact with such individuals is a delicate matter. Therefore at the meeting, I submit that covert audio recording equipment be deployed due to the sensitivity and nature of the meeting, and to afford suitable protection for yourself and I, in light of potential allegations of unhelpfulness, lack of perceived co operation or other complaint.

Such deployment will also provide a precise record of any conversation, which might be necessary to counter any future allegations made against Police, and will clearly show that we have acted with integrity.

It will also ensure that what is said by all parties can be corroborated by the Senior Investigating Officer in his record of enquiry, we also know that in enquiries such as this there is potential for witnesses to change their statements, particularly where Duwayne has given numerous accounts already and is publicly stating that he intends NOT to give evidence in the future.

The report is now submitted in accordance with "in confidence memorandum 3/96" for your formal approval.



Michael JONES  
Detective Chief Inspector.

All minutes to be numbered in consecutive order

402

No. 477

File No.                      /                      /                      Minute  
Sheet  
No.

- 1 -

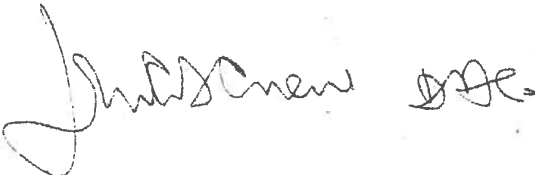
Report by DCI JONES re deployment of covert audio recording equipment                      1A

**DAC GRIEVE, Director Racial and Violent Crime Task Force**

Report as at 1A refers. May your authority be granted for deployment of such equipment.

CO24  
24.5.00

  
Michael JONES  
Detective Chief Inspector

Authorised re 'A' and B of the scene.  
It is of interest that Duwayne Brooks  
denies B(i.) and says the public  
statements that he will not give  
evidence are untrue  
24<sup>5</sup>/00 6.05p  


M.P.81(E)

[P.T.O.]



Main Line of Enquiry		Family Liaison	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Community Concern Assessment		Media Strategy		Resources	
----------------------	--	----------------	--	--	----------------	--	-----------	--

Arrest Strategy		Search Strategy		Forensic Strategy		Sensitive Issues	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Other (Specific)	
-----------------	--	-----------------	--	-------------------	--	------------------	--	--

**DECISION:**

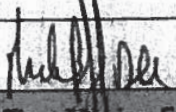
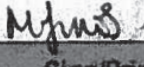
Meet on pre-arranged @ office of Deylth Gendall  
 Suburban on 16/8/00 with DE Chalk: Nte  
 Gendall, Jane Deylth + D. Brooks.

to: carefully keep record meeting -  
 (Specially Sensitive regard to Canadian Police.  
 Michael Gendall)

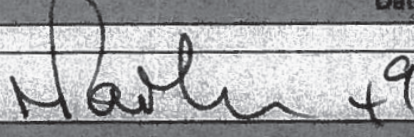
(Meeting of 16/8/00 by DE Chalk.) left office.

**REASON:**

Pre-arranged meeting kept, decision  
 to carefully record met. House DE Chalk.  
 agreed by Nte Gendall - true record required

		15/8/00 10:00
Officer Making Entry	Sign/Print	Date & Time

Officer Making Decision (if different)	Sign/Print

		
Supervised Review	Sign/Print	Date & Time

## Appendix I9: Documents supplied by Greater Manchester Police

*Agree to R. Lynn M/C Nakh  
to SG*

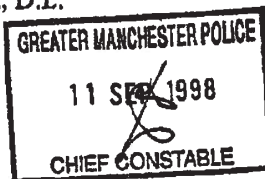
Your reference:

Our reference:

Date: 8th September 1998



D. Wilmot, Esq., Q.P.M., B.Sc., D.L.  
Chief Constable,  
Greater Manchester Police  
P.O. Box 22(S. West PDO)  
Chester House  
Boyer Street,  
Manchester M16 0RE



METROPOLITAN POLICE SERVICE  
Lawrence Review Team

New Scotland Yard  
Broadway  
London SW1H 0BG  
Telephone 0171-230 1212

Direct line 0171-230 0137

Dear Chief Constable,

You will be aware that the Lawrence Inquiry is visiting Manchester in October. The London hearings have all been at the Elephant and Castle and policing the hearings has presented us with many challenging issues. The arrangements have been the responsibility of the local divisional commander, Chief Superintendent John Godsave. Over the months John has provided a very useful liaison with the Inquiry team who think highly of him.

The secretary to the Inquiry, Stephen Wells, will shortly be writing to you about arrangements for the Part II hearings in your force area. He may suggest that your staff contact Chief Superintendent Godsave while planning for the hearings. This suggestion was discussed at a recent meeting with Stephen Wells and has the support of the Commissioner.

If your staff would find it useful to speak to him then he may be contacted at Walworth Police Station.

Yours Sincerely,

*Sara Thornton*

Sara Thornton  
Superintendent

*∴ No differentiation  
anticipation to  
the Inquiry team*

*in Experience & police  
x yet somewhat  
different Q.*

Area (P1)

GMPICSV3.BAT

Action ..... 0743:03/10/98  
Result ..... Priority L

Address Codes .....  
Retrtd Ser.No. PG/IN/010:1728 07/10/98 Sent to: ZS XB ZD ZE  
Heading THE STEPHEN LAWRENCE INQUIRY.....

THE STEPHEN LAWRENCE INQUIRY HEADED BY SIR WILLIAM MACPHERSON.....  
WILL VISIT MANCHESTER ON MONDAY 12TH AND TUESDAY 13TH OCTOBER 1998.....  
THE HEARING WILL TAKE PLACE AT THE JARVIS PICCADILLY HOTEL, PICCADILLY  
GARDENS, MANCHESTER, AND IT'S PURPOSE IS TO TAKE EVIDENCE FROM LOCAL  
ORGANISATIONS AND GROUPS WHO HAVE AN INTEREST IN THE INQUIRY.....  
THE HEARING WILL BE HELD IN PUBLIC.....  
IT IS REQUESTED THAT INFORMATION OR INTELLIGENCE REGARDING GROUPS OR  
INDIVIDUALS WHO ARE LIKELY TO ATTEND THE ENQUIRY, BE FORWARDED TO.....  
PLEASE BRING THIS MESSAGE TO THE ATTENTION OF DIVISIONAL/SUB DIVISIONAL  
AND DEPARTMENTAL COMMAND.....  
Enter Y to END  
Result:

PT NP MODE Type 1-j388-gmp LAN

## Appendix 20: Documents supplied by West Yorkshire Police

CONFIDENTIAL



### MINUTE SHEET

Date: 6 October, 1998

Ref:

To: A/DCI [REDACTED]

cc:

From: Detective Constable [REDACTED]

Tel Extn: [REDACTED]

Subject: Mohammed AMRAN

1. Following a request from yourself via Detective Sergeant [REDACTED] I have conducted discreet background enquiries into the subject Mohammed AMRAN. His full details and reference indices are as follows:

Mohammed AMRAN [REDACTED] @ Bradford



2. AMRAN is the son of a Pakistani immigrant namely [REDACTED] who originated from Faizalabad, Pakistan. His [REDACTED] uncles, [REDACTED] and the late [REDACTED] were heavily involved in Pakistani politics notably [REDACTED] who was a keen supporter of [REDACTED]. In the past the family had entertained prominent members of [REDACTED] at their homes in [REDACTED] including the former Prime Minister [REDACTED].

Whilst [REDACTED] was in power [REDACTED] was given a Government post in Rawalpindi which was generally recognised as a reward for his campaigning whilst domiciled in the U.K. Clearly AMRAN has been raised in a family environment that has always taken Politics seriously which undoubtedly would have influenced his present career path.

3. Mohammed AMRAN first came to the attention of the West Yorkshire Police in 1995 for a variety of reasons which I will summarise as follows:

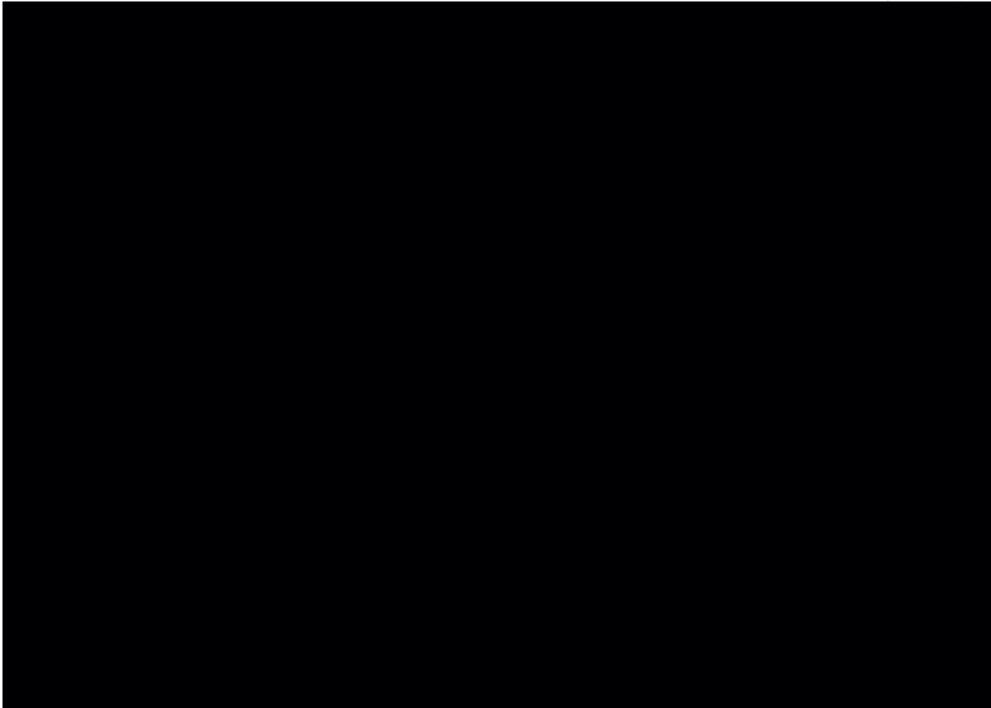


CONFIDENTIAL

1



CONFIDENTIAL



4. By mid 1996 AMRAN had become the Chairman of the Manningham Young Peoples Forum a body which formed after the Manningham riots through the Safer Cities Project. The group was based in "The Cop Shop" the former Toller Lane Police Station and was seen as a means by which the youth of the area could express their views and be heard.

Whilst in this role AMRAN has become a very high profile figure within the City and well known to both Police and Politicians alike. From this position AMRAN applied for the post of Commissioner for the Commission for Racial Equality (CRE). He was interviewed in

CONFIDENTIAL

2

15

**CONFIDENTIAL**

November 1997 by Sir Herman OUSELEY and successfully appointed by the Cabinet Office in March 1998.

On account of his work with the C.R.E. AMRAN has stood down as chairman of the "Young Peoples Forum" (as it is now known dropping "Manningham" to reflect it's district wide support). He has been replaced by Miss Amria KHATUN, aged 24.

In his capacity as Commissioner for the C.R.E. AMRAN will be appearing at the Lawrence inquiry to be held at the Stakis Hotel on Wednesday 21 October 1998. Superintendent Richardson is due to address the inquiry (see attached "flyer").

5. Over the last 3/4 years AMRAN has come into close contact with many prominent Politicians and is now on close personal terms with Marsha SINGH, the Bradford West Labour M.P. He is known and respected by Lorna WHITE the Home Office Race Relations Advisor and would appear [REDACTED] to have the ear of Jack STRAW. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

6. AMRAN runs a business under the name of "STREETWISE SECURITY". This was formed following advice that the Asian Mela Festival should be "Policed" by local people from the Manningham area. Under the guidance of [REDACTED] the company was formed, headed by AMRAM.

7. Whilst investigating this man's background I have been advised that care must be exercised in what is said and what questions are asked about AMRAN within Police circles. Although there are no known obvious sources of AMRAN within the organisation he clearly does carry influence and any further enquiries need to be discrete.

He has never featured in any previous Special Branch investigation nor have [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

8. [REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

**CONFIDENTIAL**

3



CONFIDENTIAL

14

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

No financial investigations have been conducted into the affairs of AMRAN at this stage. If such matters are to be considered I would again reiterate that any investigations would have to be conducted with the utmost discretion.

Submitted for your information.

[REDACTED]

DC

2. *See the report into this man as per the report by Ace Bettison. This seems as far as we can go with discrete enqs. at this time.*

[REDACTED]

3. A/D CI [REDACTED] DC [REDACTED] well-researched report indicates that this individual is capable of fomenting public disorder amongst Asian and Black Youth. As such our enquiries are being conducted properly with the H.O. Guidelines for S.B. work (para 13 "public order").

Submitted for the information of all Mr. Bettison.

CONFIDENTIAL

4

1/100

Det. Insp. 7.10.98.



**MINUTE SHEET**

Date: 9 October 1998  
To: ADCI [REDACTED] Special Branch  
From: Assistant Chief Constable Norman Bettison  
Subject: MOHAMMED AMRAN

ACC/NGB/[REDACTED]  
Tel: 22113

**CONFIDENTIAL**

An excellent report from DC [REDACTED] It is refreshing to know that this sort of research capability is always available. I now have a good feel for the subject who has been researched. Given that this man is likely to be increasingly prominent in Bradford politics, could DC [REDACTED] brief Superintendent Richardson and Inspector Baines, both of whom are giving evidence to the MacPherson Enquiry on 20 October, along with Mohammed Amran.

I will pass a copy of the confidential report to ACC Designate Lloyd Clarke, who is also giving evidence on those dates. I shall ask Mr Clarke to return the documents once he has seen them. These reports should not be circulated any more widely.

Thank you once again for the report. Please let DC [REDACTED] see my comments above.

A handwritten signature in black ink, appearing to read "Norman Bettison".

**N G BETTISON**  
Assistant Chief Constable  
Divisional Operations (West)

